00044792

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 15 June, 2016

THE

WORKS

OF

DON FRANCISCO DE QUEVEDO.

TRANSLATED FROM THE SPANISH.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

44792ae

VOL. III.

CONTAINING

THE LIFE OF PAUL THE SPANISH SHARPER—BOOK II.
FORTUNE IN HER WITS.
PROCLAMATION BY OLD FATHER TIME.
A TREATISE OF ALL THINGS WHATSOEVER; PAST, PRESENT, AND TO COME.
LETTERS ON SEVERAL OCCASIONS.

Illuſtrated with Beautiful Engravings.

EDINBURGH:

PRINTED FOR MUNDELL & SON; J. MUNDELL, COLLEGE, GLASGOW;
AND J. WRIGHT, LONDON.

1798.

00044792

THE

PLEASANT HISTORY

OF THE

LIFE AND ACTIONS

OF

PAUL

THE SPANISH SHARPER,

The Pattern of Rogues, and Mirror of Vagabonds.

BOOK II.

CHAP I.

What happened to me at my firſt coming to Madrid, until Night.

WE got to Madrid at ten o'clock in the morning, and went lovingly together by conſent to the houſe where Don Toribio's friends lived. A very old woman miſerably clad opened the door, he inquired for his friends, and ſhe anſwered, they were gone out a-ſeeking. We continued by ourſelves until noon, diverting the time, he encouraging me to follow the ſponging courſe of life, and I liſtening carefully to his advice. Half an hour after twelve, in came a phantom clad in black baize down to his heels, and ſo bare, that a louſe would not ſtick upon it; they talked to one another in cant, the reſult whereof was his embracing me, and offering his ſervice. We diſcourſed awhile, and then he pulled out a glove, in which were ſixteen royals, and a letter, by virtue of which he had collected that money, pretending it was a licenſe to beg for a woman in diſtreſs. He took the money out of the glove, drew another to it out of his pocket, and folded them together as phyſicians do. I aſked him, why he did not wear them? And he anſwered, becauſe they were both for one hand, and that way they ſerved as well as if they had been fellows. All this while I obſerved he did not let go his cloak, which was wrapped about him; and being but a novice, for my better information, took the liberty to inquire, why he ſtill hugged himſelf up ſo cloſe in his cloak? he replied, "My friend, there is a "great rent down my back, made up with a "patch of old ſtuff, beſides a great ſpot of oil; "this piece of a cloak hides all, and thus I can "appear abroad." Accordingly he unwrapped himſelf, and under his caſſock I perceived a great bulk ſticking out, which I took to have been trunk-breeches, for it looked like them, until he, going in to louſe himſelf, tucked up his coats, and I perceived there were only two hoops of paſteboard tied to his waiſt, and joining to his thighs, which ſtuck out under his mourning, for he wore neither ſhirt nor breeches, but was ſo naked, that he had ſcarce any thing to looſe. He went into the louſing room, and turned a little board that hung at the door, on which was written, "One is louſing," that no other might go in until he had done. I bleſſed God with all my heart, to ſee how he had provided for men, giving them ingenuity, if they wanted riches. "For my part," ſaid my friend, "I am ſick of the breeches with travelling, and "therefore muſt withdraw to mend." He aſked, whether there were any rags? The old woman, who gathered them twice a week about the ſtreets, as the rag-women do for the paper mills, to cure the incurable diſeaſes of thoſe gentlemen, anſwered, there were none; and that Don Lorenzo Yniguez del Pedroſo had kept his bed a fortnight for want of them, being ſick of his coat. At this time in came one booted, in a travelling garb, a gray ſuit, and a hat bridled up on both ſides. The others acquainted him who I was, and he ſaluted me very lovingly, laid down his cloak; and it appeared, who would imagine it, that the fore part of his coat was of gray cloth, and the back of white linen, well liquored with ſweat. I could not forbear laughing, and he very demurely ſaid, "You'll come into our row, and then you "won't laugh; I'll lay a wager you don't "know why I wear my hat with the brims "bridled up." I anſwered, "To look big, and "remove all obſtacles from your ſight." "That's "your miſtake," ſaid he, "I do it to hinder the "ſight; it is becauſe I have no hatband, and "this hides it." This ſaid, he pulled out about twenty letters, and as many royals, ſaying, he could not deliver thoſe. Every one was marked a royal poſtage, and they were all folded alike. He ſigned any name that came into his head; writ news of his own making, and delivered them in that habit to people of faſhion, receiving the poſtage, which he practiſed twice a month, all which to me was very amuſing.

Next came two others, one of them with a cloth coat, reaching but half way down his wide kneed breeches, and a cloak of the ſame ſort, with his band ruffled up to hide the rends in it. The wide breeches were of camblet, but only as far as appeared, for all the reſt was of red baize. This man was jangling and brawling with the other, who wore a ruff for want of a band, a hanging coat for want of a cloak, and went upon a crutch, with one leg bound up in rags and furs, becauſe he had but one ſtocking. He pretended to be a ſoldier, and had been ſo, but a ſcurvy one, and by the privilege of a ſoldier intruded into any houſe. He in the coat and half breeches cried, "The one half, or at "leaſt a conſiderable part, is due to me; if you "do not give it me, I vow to God." "Do not "vow to God," replied the other, "for I am "not lame at home, and if you prate, I'll lay "this crutch about your ears." This threat inflamed both parties; they came to high words, and gave one another the lie; then falling to blows, the clothes in a moment flew all about in rags at the firſt handling. We parted them, and inquiring into the cauſe of the quarrel, the ſoldier cried, "Put tricks upon me! you ſhall "not have the value of a croſs. You muſt un-"derſtand, gentlemen, that being at St. Savi-"our's Church, there came a child to this poor "fellow, and aſked him, whether I was the en-"ſign John de Lorenzana? who anſwered, I "was, becauſe he ſaw he had ſomething in his "hand. With this, he brought the child to "me, and calling me enſign, ſaid, here, Sir, ſee "what this child would have with you. I un-

" derſtood the trick, and ſaid, I was the man,
" took his meſſage, and with it a dozen of hand-
" kerchiefs, returning an anſwer to his mother,
" who ſent them to ſome perſon of that name.
" Now he demands half, and I'll be torn in
" pieces before I'll part with them; my own
" noſe ſhall have the wearing of them all out."
The cauſe was adjudged on his ſide, only he was forbid blowing his noſe in them, and ordered to deliver them up to the old woman, to make ruffles and hand-wriſts, to appear in ſight, and repreſent ſhirt-ſleeves, for blowing the noſe was abſolutely prohibited. When night came, we all went to bed, and lay as cloſe together as herrings in a barrel, or tools in a tweezer-caſe. As for ſupper, there was not ſo much as a thought of it; moſt of the gang never ſtripped, for they were naked enough to go to bed as they went all day.

CHAP. II.

The ſame Subject of the foregoing Chapter continued, with other ſtrange Adventures.

Day came, and we all rouſed. I was as well acquainted with them already, as if we had been one mother's children; for there is ever an eaſineſs and ſatisfaction in what is not good. It was very pleaſant to ſee one put on his ſhirt at ten ſeveral times, becauſe it conſiſted of as many ſeveral clouts, and ſay a prayer at every one, like a prieſt that is veſting to go to the altar. One could not find the way into his breeches; another called out for help to put on his doublet, for none of them knew the right ſide from the wrong, or the head from the heels. When this was over, which afforded no little pleaſure, they all laid hold of their needles and thread, and dearn, ſtitch, and patch. One fixed an arm againſt a wall, to draw together the rents in a ſleeve; another kneeled down, to botch up the holes in his hoſe; another clapped his head betwixt his legs, to come at a breach upon his buttocks. No Dutch landſcape afforded ſuch variety of ſtrange figures as I ſaw there; they botched, and the old woman ſupplied them with materials, as rags and clouts of all the colours of the rainbow, which ſhe had picked up on Saturday night.

When the mending time was over, as they called it, they all viewed one another narrowly, to ſee what was amiſs, in order to go abroad a ſhifting. I told them I would have them order my dreſs, for I deſigned to lay out the hundred royals I had on a ſuit of clothes, and leave off my caſſock. “ That muſt not be,” ſaid they, “ let the money be put into the common ſtock; “ we will clothe him immediately out of our “ wardrobe, and appoint him his walk in the “ town, where he alone ſhall range and ſeek “ out.” I conſented, depoſited the money, and in a trice they made me a mourning cloth coat out of my caſſock, cut my long cloak into a ſhort one, and trucked the remains of it for an old hat new dreſſed, making a hatband very neatly of ſome cotton picked out of inkhorns. They took off my band and wide-kneed breeches, and inſtead of theſe, put me on a pair of cloſe hoſe, ſlaſhed only before, for the ſides and the back part were nothing but ſheep-ſkins. The ſilk ſtockings they gave me were not half ſtockings, for they reached but four fingers below the knees, the reſt being covered with a tight pair of boots over my own red hoſe. The band they gave me was all in rags, and when they had put it on, they ſaid, “ The band is “ ſomewhat decayed on the ſides and behind; “ if any body looks at you, Sir, you muſt be “ ſure to turn about as they do, like the ſun-“ flower, which ſtill moves as he does. If there “ happen to be two at once obſerving you on “ both ſides, fall back; and to prevent being

" obſerved behind, let your hat hang down on " your neck, ſo that the brim may cover the " band, leaving all your forehead bare; and if " any body aſks why you wear it ſo, tell him, " it is becauſe you dare ſhow your face in any " part of the world." Next they gave me a box, containing black and white thread, ſewing ſilk, packthread, a needle, a thimble, bits of cloth, linen, and ſilk, with other ſhreds and ſcraps, and a knife. To my girdle they faſtened a tinder-box, with a ſteel and flint in a little pouch, ſaying, " This box will carry you through " the world, without the help of friends or re- " lations; this contains all we ſtand in need of; " take and keep it." They appointed the Ward of Saint Lewis for my walk, and ſo I entered upon my employment. We all went out together, but becauſe I was a novice, they ordered him that brought and converted me to be my inſtructor in the trade of ſharping.

We ſet out very gravely, walking in ſtate, with our beads in our hands, and made towards my precinct. We paid reſpect to all we met, taking off our hats to the men, though we had rather have taken their cloaks; to the women we bowed low, becauſe they are fond of reſpect, and proud of being honoured. My worthy governor, as he went along, would ſay to one creditor, I ſhall receive money to-morrow; to another, Have patience for a day or two, the bankers put me off. One aſked him for his cloak, another for his girdle; by which I perceived he was ſuch a true friend to his friend, that he had nothing which was his own. We went in and out from one ſide of the ſtreet to the other, like drunken men, that find it too narrow for them, to avoid duns. Here one whipped out to demand his houſe-rent, there another the hire of his ſword, preſently a third the lent of his ſheets and ſhirts; ſo that it appeared he was a hireling gentleman, like a hired horſe. It happened he ſpied a man at a good diſtance, who, as he told me, was ready to tear him to pieces for a debt, but could not tear the money from him. To prevent being known by him, he let fall his long hair, which before was tucked up behind his ears, and looked like a ſhock dog that was never ſhorn. Then he clapped a patch upon one eye, and began to talk to me in Italian. He had time enough to do this before the other came up, who had not yet obſerved him. I declare it, I ſaw the man round and round him, as a dog does before he lies down; he bleſſed himſelf as if he had been bewitched, and went away, ſaying, "God bleſs me, I durſt have "ſworn it had been he; what a mighty miſtake

" I had like to commit; he who has loſt oxen, " always fancies he hears their bells." I was ready to burſt with laughing to ſee what a figure my friend made; he ſtepped into a porch to tuck up his hair again, and pull off his patch, and ſaid, " Theſe are the dreſſes for denying of " debts; learn my friend, for you will ſee a " thouſand ſuch ſhifts in this town." We went on, and at the corner of a ſtreet took two ſlices of gingerbread, and as many drams of brandy, of a whore, who gave it us for nothing, after wiſhing my director welcome to town, who ſaid, " This puts a man in a condition to make ſhift " without a dinner for this day, for at worſt he " is ſure of ſo much." It went to my very heart to think it was dubious whether we ſhould have any dinner, and anſwered him very diſconſolately in behalf of my ſtomach, to which he replied, " You are a man of a ſmall faith, and " repoſe little confidence in our mumping pro" feſſion. God Almighty provides for the crows " and jackdaws, and even for ſcriveners, and " ſhould he fail, poor Pinchguts? You have " but a poor ſoul." " You are in the right," quoth I, " but ſtill I fear I ſhall make it poorer, " for the belly is the life of the ſoul."

As we were talking after this manner, a clock ſtruck twelve, and being yet a ſtranger to that profeſſion, my guts took no notice of the gingerbread, but I was as if I had eaten no ſuch thing. Being thus put in mind again of that want, I turned to my conductor, and ſaid, "My "friend, this buſineſs of ſtarving is very hard to "be learned at firſt; I was uſed to feed like a "farmer, and am now brought to faſt like an "anchorite. It is no wonder you are not hun-"gry, who have been bred to it from your in-"fancy, like king Mithridates with poiſon, ſo "that it is now familiar and habitual to you. "I do not perceive you take any diligent care "to provide belly-timber, and therefore I am "reſolved to ſhift as well as I can." "God is "my life," quoth he, "what a pleaſant ſpark "you are; it is but juſt now ſtruck twelve, and "are you in ſuch a mighty haſte already? Your "ſtomach is very exact to its hours, and imme-"diately cries out, Cupboard; but it muſt prac-"tiſe patience, and learn to be in arrears at "times. What, would you be cramming all "day? the very beaſts can do no more. It "does not appear in hiſtory that ever knight of "our order was troubled with a looſeneſs; but "on the contrary, our commons are ſo ſhort, "that we ſcarce ever go to ſtool. I told you "already, that God provides for all men, yet, if "you are in ſuch haſte, I am going to receive

“ the alms at the monaſtery of St. Jerome,
“ where there are moſt delicious friars; there
“ I will ſtuff my devil: If you will go along
“ with me, well and good; if not, every one
“ take his own courſe.” “ Farewell,” ſaid I,
“ my wants are not ſo ſmall as to be ſatisfied
“ with the leavings of others; every man ſhift
“ for himſelf.”

My friend walked very upright, now and then looking upon his feet, and took out a few crumbs of bread, which he carried for that purpoſe in a little box, theſe he ſtrewed about his beard and clothes, ſo that he looked as if he had dined. I coughed and hawked to conceal my weakneſs, wiping my whiſkers, muffled up with my cloak upon the left ſhoulder, playing with my tens, for I had but ten beads upon my ſtring. All that ſaw me believed I had dined, and had they thought the lice were then dining upon me, they had gueſſed right. All my confidence was in my crowns I had ſunk, though I had a ſcruple of conſcience, that it was againſt the rules of our profeſſion to pay for a dinner, being obliged to feed upon the public; but I was reſolved to break the faſt, and tranſgreſs the ordinances. By this time I was come to the corner of St. Lewis's Street, where a paſtry-cook lived. On the bulk lay a curious mutton pye, delicately baked, and piping hot out of the oven; my noſe ſtumbled at it, and I made a full ſet like a dog at a partridge, fixing my eyes, and gazing ſo ſtedfaſtly, that it ſhrunk up as if it had been blaſted. It had been pleaſant enough to know how many ways I caſt about to ſteal it, and then again reſolved to buy it. By this time it ſtruck one, which put ſuch a damp upon me, that I reſolved to launch into the next cook's ſhop. As I was ſteering towards one, it pleaſed God that I met with a friend of mine, called the Licentiate Flechilla, who came ſwinging his caſſock down the ſtreet, his face all duſty, and his long robes full of daglocks. As ſoon as he ſpied me, he ran to embrace me, and yet I wonder he ſhould know me in that condition. I returned his embrace, he aſked how I did? and I anſwered, "I have abundance of ſtories to tell "you, Mr. Licentiate; all that troubles me, is, "that I muſt be gone to-night. I am ſorry for "that," quoth he, "and were it not late, and "that I am going in haſte to dinner, I would "ſtay with you; but a ſiſter I have that is mar"ried, and her huſband expects me. Is Mrs. "Anne here?" ſaid I, "whatever becomes of "my buſineſs, I'll go and wait upon her; that "is a duty I cannot diſpenſe with." Hearing him ſay he had not dined, made me ſharp

Away I went with him, and by the way told him, that a wench he had been very fond of at Alcala was then in town, and I could get him admittance into her houſe. He was mightily pleaſed at this motion, for I purpoſely contrived to talk of ſuch things as might be pleaſing to him. This diſcourſe held us till we came to his ſiſter's houſe; in we went, I made very great tenders of ſervice to both huſband and wife, and they believing all I ſaid was true, and that I might be out of countenance for coming at that time of day, began to excuſe themſelves, ſaying, They would have made ſome proviſion, had they thought of ſuch a gueſt. I laid hold of the opportunity, and invited myſelf, telling them, I was no ſtranger, but an old friend, and ſhould take it unkindly to be treated with ceremony. They ſat down, I did ſo too; and the better to ſtop the others mouth, who had not invited me, nor ever thought of any ſuch thing, every now and then I gave him a remembrance of the wench, ſaying, She had aſked for, and was infinitely fond of him, with many more lies to that purpoſe, which made him bear the more patiently with my cramming, for ſuch havock as I made in the firſt courſe was never ſeen. The boiled meat was ſerved up, I tumbled the beſt part of it down my throat in a moment, without nicety, but in ſuch a hurry, as if I had not thought it ſafe enough betwixt my teeth. As I hope for mercy, I laid about me at ſuch a rate, as if my life had depended on it, and was ſo expeditious, that every thing ſeemed to vaniſh in my preſence. No doubt but they obſerved how I poured down the ſoup, how ſoon I drained the diſh, how clean I picked the bones, and how cleverly I deſpatched the meat, and to ſay the truth, at every turn I clapped a good hunch of bread into my pocket, till it could hold no more.

When the table was taken away, the Licentiate and I ſtepped aſide, to talk about our going to the aforeſaid wench's houſe, which I repreſented to him as a very eaſy matter; but as we were talking at the window, I pretended ſomebody had called to me from the ſtreet, and anſwered, "Sir, I come this moment;" aſked leave of my friend, promiſing to return immediately. I left him waiting for me, and ſo he might have done to this day, for I ſlipped away, and my belly being full, had no more occaſion for him. I met him ſeveral times after, and excuſed myſelf, telling a thouſand lies, which are not to our purpoſe. Rambling thence about the ſtreets at random, I came to the Guadalajara gate, and ſat down on one of the benches.

that are at the mercer's door. As God would have it, there came two of thoſe creatures that borrow money upon their handſome faces to the ſhop; they were both cloſe veiled, with only one eye bare to ſee their way, and attended by an old woman, and a boy half footman, half page. They aſked for ſome very rich new faſhion wrought velvet. To commence a diſcourſe, I began to play and pun upon the velvet, turning and winding, till I brought it to all the waggiſh lewd meanings I had a mind to. I perceived my freedom had put them in hopes they might carry off ſome preſent from the ſhop; and knowing I could be no loſer, I offered them whatſoever they pleaſed. They ſtood out a little, pretending they did not uſe to accept of any thing from perſons they were not acquainted with. I laid hold of that opportunity, telling them, I owned it was a preſumption in me to offer them any thing there, but that I deſired them to accept of a parcel of rich ſilks ſent me from Milan, which that page of mine ſhould carry them at night, pointing to one that ſtood over the way bareheaded, waiting for his maſter, who was in a ſhop. And that they might take me for ſome man of quality, and well known, I pulled off my hat to all the judges, privy-counſellors and peers that went by, bowing as if we had been very well acquainted, though I knew none of them. Theſe outward ſhows, and my taking out a piece or two of gold of my hidden treaſure, on pretence of giving an alms to a poor body that begged of me, made them conclude I was ſome gentleman of note. They thought fit to go home becauſe it grew late, and took their leave, charging me to be ſure the page ſhould go as privately as might be. I begged of them, only as a favour and token of their good will, a pair of beads, all ſet and linked in gold, which the handſomeſt of them had in her hand, as a pledge for me to viſit them the next day without fail. They made ſome difficulty to part with it, till I offered them a hundred crowns in pawn for it, which they refuſed, hoping by that means to draw me in for a better penny, aſked where I lodged, and told me their quarters, deſiring me to obſerve, that they could not receive meſſages at all times, becauſe they were perſons of quality. I led them through the high-ſtreet, and before we turned out of it, made choice of the largeſt and faireſt houſe I could find, which had a coach without horſes ſtanding at the door, telling them it was mine, and at their ſervice, as was the horſes and maſter of them. My name, I told them, was Don Alvaro de Cordova, and in I went to rights before their faces. At our coming out of the ſhop, I remember, I called over one of the pages from the other ſide of the way, beckoning to him very ſtately with my hand, and pretending to order him and the reſt of them to wait there till I came, but in reality only aſked whether he did not belong to my uncle the privy-counſellor; he anſwered me he did not, and ſo I diſmiſſed him, ſetting myſelf off with borrowed feathers.

When it was dark night, we all went home, and coming in, I found the counterfeit ſoldier, that had the clouted leg, with a white wax flambeau they had given him to attend a funeral, and he run away with it. This fellow's name was Magazo, born at Olias; he had been captain in a play, and had fought abundance of Moors in a ſword-dance. When he talked with any that had ſerved in the Low Countries, he told them he had been in China; and if he happened to meet with any that had been there, he pretended he had ſerved in Flanders. He talked much of encamping, and lying in the field, though he had never been in any, unleſs it were to louſe himſelf; named abundance of ſtrong holds, and knew none but the common gaols, highly extolled the memory of Don John of Auſtria, commended the Duke of Alva for a generous true friend, and had abundance of names of noted Turks, galleys, and great officers, at his fingers ends, all which he had picked out of a ballad then in vogue concerning the like affairs. But being altogether unacquainted with geography, or any thing of the ſea, diſcourſing about the famous battle of Lepanto, he ſaid, that Lepanto was a very brave Turk. The poor wretch was ſo ignorant, that he ſerved to make us excellent ſport.

Soon after in came my friend with his noſe beaten almoſt flat to his face, all his head wrapped up in clouts very bloody and dirty. We aſked him how he came into that pickle? he told us, he went to the alms at the monaſtery of St. Jerome, and aſked for a double portion, pretending it was for ſome poor people that could not beg; the friars ſtopped ſo much from the common mumpers to give it him; at which they being provoked, dogged him, and found he was laying about him with might and main, in a dark corner, behind a door. They fell into a debate, whether it was lawful to cheat to fill one's own belly, and to rob others to ſerve one's ſelf; the conteſt roſe to high words, which were followed with blows, and thoſe raiſed many knobs and bumps on his head. They attacked him with their pots they received the pottage in; and the damage done to his noſe came by a wooden diſh they gave him to ſmell to, more haſtily than had been convenient: They took away his ſword; out came the porter, and had enough to do to part them. In ſhort, our poor brother was in ſo much danger, that he offered to return all he had eaten, and it would not ſerve his turn; for all they inſiſted upon, was, that he begged for others, and thought much to paſs for a mumper. Out ſtarted from among the reſt of the gang a two handed mendicant ſcholar, crying, Do but behold the figure made up of clouts like a rag baby, as poor as a paſtry-cook in Lent, as full of holes as a flagelet, all patches like a magpie, as greaſy as an oilman, and as tattered as an old colours; pitiful ſcoundrel, there are thoſe that receive the holy ſaints alms that are fit to be biſhops, or for any other dignity; I myſelf am a graduate at Siguenza, and does Mr. Shab-rab think it a diſgrace to eat amongſt us? The porter interpoſed, hearing a little old fellow cry out, that though he came there for pottage, he was deſcended from the famous great captain, and had many lofty relations. But I will leave them here, ſince our companion was now got off, and endeavouring to ſhake his bones into their places again.

CHAP. XIII.

The farther Proceedings of this Sharping Gang, till they were thrown all together into Gaol.

THE next that came, was Merlo Diaz, his girdle hung all round with earthen cups and glaſſes, which he got at nunneries, begging drink at the wheel, without the leaſt remorſe of conſcience.—Don Lorenzo de Pedroſo relieved him, coming in with an excellent good cloak, which he had exchanged at a billiard table for his own, that had no ſign it had been made of wool, it was ſo threadbare. This fellow uſed to take off his cloak, as if he deſigned to play, and to lay it among the reſt, and then not agreeing about the match, he returned to the place, took up the cloak he liked beſt, and went his way; the ſame he did at nine-pins and other games. All this was nothing in compariſon of Don Coſme, who came in with a regiment of boys at his tail, that were troubled with the king's-evil, cancers or leproſy, or were hurt or lame. He played the white witch, or doctor, that cured by prayers and bleſſings, having to this purpoſe learned ſome ſuperſtitious ceremonies and cramp words of an old woman. By this cheat he got more than all the reſt together, for if any one came to be cured without ſomething to make a ſhow under his cloak, or the gingle of money in his pocket, or the cry of ſome live fowl, he was never at leiſure. He had made fools of half the town, making them believe whatſoever he pleaſed, for there never was ſo abſolute a maſter at lying; inſomuch that he never ſpoke truth but accidentally. His common diſcourſe was of heaven; when he came into a houſe, he always ſaid, "God be here;" and going out, "The Lord "have you in his keeping." All he had about him ſeemed hypocriſy, a pair of beads as big as walnuts; he contrived that ſometime a diſcipline made bloody at his noſe, ſhould peep out under his cloak; when he ſhrugged to remove the lice that bit him, he perſuaded others it was the hair cloth he wore next his ſkin, and that this ſtarving was a voluntary faſt. Then would he tell ſtories of ſtrange temptations he overcame; if the devil happened to be named, he cried, "The Lord deliver and preſerve us," kiſſed the ground when he went into the church, called himſelf unworthy ſinner, never lifted up his eyes to look at women, but did not ſtick to take up their coats. Theſe cheats had ſo far prevailed on the multitude, that they begged his prayers, and might as well have applied themſelves to the devil; for he was not only a gameſter, but a mere ſhark or pickpocket, but never took the name of God in vain, being always ſure to get by it. As for women, he had ſeveral children ſcattered about, and two holy ſiſters with child at that time; and in ſhort, if any commandment eſcaped breaking quite, he never failed to crack it.

The next that came was Polacon, making a great noiſe, and aſking for a long ſad coloured gown, a great croſs, an overgrown falſe beard and a bell; and uſed to go about at night in this dreſs, crying, "Remember you are to die, "and be kind to the ſouls departed, &c." which brought him in conſiderable alms; and when he found a houſe open, he went in, and if nobody was in the way, ſtole all that came to his hand. If any body ſaw him, he rung his bell, and in a diſmal tone, as he knew how to frame it, cried, "Remember, brethren, &c." All theſe and many more contrivances, and ſtrange ways of ſtealing, I learned in a month I continued among them. To return where I left off, I ſhowed the beads, and told them the ſtory; they applauded my ingenuity, and the old woman took them into her cuſtody, to ſell them, and went about ſaying, they belonged to a poor maiden gentlewoman, who was fain to ſell them for bread, having her ſtory ready for every occaſion. The old jade wept when ever ſhe pleaſed, wrung her hands, and ſighed moſt bitterly; ſhe called all people, children; and over a good ſmock, jerkin, gown and petticoats, wore a tattered long robe of ſackcloth, given her by an anchorite, her friend, who lived on the mountains by Alcala. Her buſineſs was to manage all the goods, to direct and conceal; but the devil, who is always kind to his ſervants, ſo ordered it, that going one day to a houſe to ſell ſome clothes and other things, ſomebody there knew their own goods, ſent for an officer, ſecured the old hag, whom we called Mother Lebruſca, and ſhe preſently diſcovered all the plot, told how we all lived, and that we were gentlemen of prey. The officer left her in the gaol, and came to our houſe, where he found me, and all my companions. He had half a dozen under-catchpoles along with him, and removed the whole ſharping congregation to the priſon, where our gentility availed us very little.

CHAP. IV.

The Priſon deſcribed, with an Account of what happened to us in it, till the old Woman was whipped; my Companions expoſed to public Shame, and I came out upon Bail.

As ſoon as we came into the gaol, we were loaded with irons, and going altogether to be clapped into the dungeon; but I made uſe of the money I had to prevent falling into that hell, pulling out a piſtole, and making it glitter in the gaoler's eyes, ſaying, "Pray, Sir, be pleaſed to hear me a word in private." He having ſeen a glimpſe of the gold, took me aſide, and I went on, "I beſeech you, Sir, take pity of an unfortunate man." Then, I took him lovingly by the hand, and clapped in the piece, which he greedily graſped, being uſed to ſuch ceremonies, and anſwered, "I will examine into your diſtemper, and if it is dangerous, you ſhall not go down into the hole." I underſtood him, and ſubmitted myſelf peaceably, ſo that he left me out, and turned down my companions. I will not take up time in relating what ſport we made in the priſon, and as we went along the ſtreets; for being hunched along bound, ſome of us without cloaks, and others with them, dragging along; it was comical to ſee ſuch a parcel of ragamuffins, all patches, and parti-coloured black and white, like magpies. The officers knew not how to take faſt hold of them, they were all in ſuch tatters; ſome they thought to graſp by the fleſh, and finding none, for it was all ſtarved away, they feared to be anſwerable for disjointing the bones. Others loſt their coats and breeches by the rough handling of thoſe unmerciful fellows. When they unbound the rope, they led them all in, the rags and clouts dropped off with it. At night I was carried to the common ſide, where I had a little bed allotted me. It was odd to ſee ſome lie down in their whole caſe, without taking off the leaſt rag they wore in the day. Others, at one motion put off all the clothes they had; others played; but at laſt we were made faſt, and the light put out. We all forgot our irons, and took our reſt very favourably. The great jorden, for eaſing the body, ſtood at my bed's head; and about midnight all the priſoners began to take their turns at it, letting fly ſuch volleys, that hearing the noiſe, I concluded it was thunder, and began to pray and bleſs myſelf, till perceiving a very ill ſcent followed, I found it was a ſort of baſtard thunder. The ſtink was ſo great, that it obliged me to ſpeak to them to remove the utenſil to ſome other place, which ſome of them taking in dudgeon, we came to high words. I was reſolved to be beforehand, for the firſt ſtroke is half the battle, and accordingly laid one of them acroſs the face with my belt, he ſtarted up in haſte, overſet the jorden, which waked all the company with the fall. We beat out one anothers eyes with our girdles in the dark; and the ſtench was ſo intolerable, that they all got up, and there was a hideous cry. The gaoler fearing leſt ſome of the vaſſals might deſert him, came running up with all his guards well armed, opened the door, brought in a light, and examined the caſe. All the evidence condemned me, and I only pleaded the opening of their blind eyes had not let me cloſe mine all night.

The gaoler fancying I would drop him another piſtole, rather than be let down into the hole, laid hold of this opportunity, and ordered me to be buried among the reſt, which I reſolved to endure, rather than break bulk any more. I was conveyed down, where my old friends received me with a great ſhout, and much ſatisfaction. That night I lay cool, without any thing to cover me; when it was day, we all came out of the dungeon, ſaw one anothers faces, and preſently our companions demanded the uſual garniſh-money, on pain of a good liquoring. I preſently diſburſed ſix royals; but my companions having nothing to give, their cauſe was referred till night. Among the reſt in the dungeon, was a one-eyed tall young fellow, with a great pair of whiſkers, a ſour look, round ſhouldered, and thoſe well flogged. He had a whole ſmith's forge upon him, double fetters on his legs, and a great chain hanging from his neck; they called him the Giant; and he ſaid of himſelf that he was in priſon for petty trifles, which I concluded to be ſome mere larceny; and if any body aſked him whether that was the crime, he anſwered in the negative, but that it was for backward ſins: I fancied he had meant ſome old offences, according to their cant, but at length was informed he was there for Sodomy. When the gaoler reproved him for unluckineſs, he would call him the hangman's pantryman, and general ſtorekeeper of ſin. At other times he would cry, "You are a "fool to contend with one that will vaniſh in "ſmoke, by the Lord I will ſtifle you as I go "off." This he had ſaid, expecting to be burnt alive. This villain had pleaded guilty, and was ſuch a helliſh dog, that we were all fain to wear armour on our poſteriors to guard them from him, and ſcarce durſt break wind, for fear of putting him in mind of thoſe parts. He contracted friendſhip with another they called Robledo, and by a nickname the Tumbler, who ſaid he was in priſon for his dexterity, which conſiſted in making every thing vaniſh he laid his hands on. He had been laſhed by all the beadles and hangmen in Spain; his face was all over cuts and ſcars, his ears were at a great diſtance, for he carried but one about him, having left the other behind him in his travels; his noſe was ſoldered together, having been cleft with a cut of a ſword. Four other rampant fellows, like lions in heraldry, herded with thoſe two, all of them loaded with chains, and condemned to thraſh the ſea, that is to the galleys. Theſe ſaid they might boaſt, in a ſhort time, that they had ſerved the king both by ſea and land; and a man would not believe how impatiently they expected their commiſſion. Theſe people taking it ill that my comrades had not diſcharged the duty of garniſh, contrived to give them a ſound laſhing at night, with a curious rope's end, provided for that purpoſe. When night came, we were put into the diſmal vault, they put out the light, and I preſently ſecured myſelf under my bed; two of them began to whiſtle, and a third to lay about him with the rope's end. The ſparks perceiving it was like to go ill with them, crowded themſelves up ſo cloſe together, all the fleſh of their bones being before devoured by the mange and lice, that they found room enough in a cranny between the boards, lying like ſo many fleas in a ſeam, or bugs in a bedſtead. The laſhes ſounded on the boards, but the parties they were deſigned for lay cloſe without ſpeaking a word. The whipſters obſerving they did not complain, laid aſide their diſcipline, and began to pelt them with ſtones, bricks, and rubbiſh, they had gathered to that effect. This project ſucceeded better, for a ſtone hit Don Toribio on the neck, and raiſed a bunch as thick as his fiſt. He cried out murder, and the knaves, that he might not be heard, fell a ſinging all together, and rattled their chains. Don Toribio ſtruggled with his companions to get undermoſt, and in the ſcuffle, their bones rattled like caſtanets, their coats fell all in tatters, and not a rag was left upon them. The ſtones flew about ſo thick, that in a ſhort ſpace poor Don Toribio had as many knobs on his head, as there are on a pine apple. Finding there was no manner of protection againſt that dreadful ſhower of hail that fell upon us, but there he was like to die a martyr, without being guilty of the leaſt piety or religion, he cried out, begging they would let him get out of that place, and he would pay immediately, delivering up his clothes in pawn. The perſecutors conſented, and though his companions would have held him, becauſe he ſheltered them, he got up the beſt he could, all battered, and came over to my ſide. The reſt were not ſo quick at promiſing the ſame, but that they had as many knocks as hairs on their heads, yet offered up their clothes towards paying the garniſh; thinking it was better to lie abed for want of clothes, than for broken bones. Accordingly they were diſcharged for that night, but in the morning had orders to ſtrip; they did ſo, and it appeared that all their clothes put together would not bring one halfpenny loaf. They lay abed, that is, wrapped up in a blanket belonging to the public, on which all the priſoners uſed to louſe themſelves. As ſoon as they were warm they began to feel their friends about them, for the lice had kept a long lent, ſome of them had not broke their faſt for a week before, and yet were as big as nutmegs, and laid in their teeth as cloſe as a ſharp bull-dog. They expected nothing but to be devoured that morning for a breakfaſt, threw away the blanket, curſing their fate, and clawing the very ſkin off their bones with their hands.

I ſlipped out of the dungeon, deſiring them to excuſe me for not bearing them company, becauſe it was not convenient. I greaſed the gaoler over again with three pieces of eight, and being informed who the clerk was that had the charge of proſecuting us, ſent for him by a young running thief. He came, I got into a room with him, and after ſome diſcourſe concerning our buſineſs in general, I told him I had ſome little money, which I deſired him to keep for me; and that as far as might be done with ſafety, he would favour an unfortunate young gentleman, who had been unadviſedly drawn into that offence. "Believe me, Sir," ſaid he, when he had graſped the ready, "the whole "matter depends upon us; and he that has a "mind to be a knave, may do a great deal of "miſchief: I have ſent more men to the gal-"lows without any cauſe, but for my pleaſure, "than there are words in an indictment. Leave "it to me, and do not queſtion but I'll bring "you off ſafe and ſound." This ſaid, he made as if he was going away, but came back again from the door to aſk ſomething for honeſt James Garzia, the conſtable, for it was convenient to ſtop his mouth with a ſilver gag; ſomething more he hinted at concerning the clerk of the court; ſaying, "It is in this clerk's "power, Sir, to undo a man by turning up the

" whites of his eyes, raiſing his voice, making a " noiſe to rouſe a lord mayor or recorder when " they are aſleep, as it often happens, and many " other ſuch dangerous actions." I apprehended him, and lugged out fifty royals more; in return for which he bid me ſet my cloak right, taught me two cures for a cold I had got in the priſon; and to conclude, ſaid, " Make yourſelf " eaſy, the gaoler will be kind to you, if you " give him but a piece of eight, for theſe ſort of " people do nothing out of good nature, but all " for intereſt." I could not but ſmile at his obſervation, he went his way, and I gave the gaoler a crown; he knocked off my irons, and gave me leave to go to his houſe. He had a wife like a whale, and two daughters as ugly as the devil, and as ſenſeleſs as ſtocks, yet errant whores in ſpite of their faces.

It happened that the gaoler, whoſe name was Blandones de San Pablo, and his wife's Donna Anna Moraez, came home to dinner one day, when I was there, in a great rage, fuming, and would not eat. His wife dreading ſome mighty thing had happened, drew near, and tormented him ſo long with the uſual importunities, that at laſt he ſaid, " What a pox d'ye think ails me? " That ſcoundrel dog of Almendros, having " ſome words with him about farming the gaol,

" told me you are not ſpotleſs." " Has the villain " ever ſcoured me?" cried ſhe, " by my grandame's ſoul you don't deſerve to be called " man, ſince you did not tear his beard for him; " did I ever employ his ſervants to clean me?" Then turning to me, ſhe went on, " By the " Lord he cannot call me Jew, like himſelf, who " is a rakehell by his father, and of one of the " tribes of Iſrael by his mother. By my troth, " my Paul, had I heard him, I would have put " him in mind that the inquiſition had laid the " St. Andrew's croſs upon his back." The gaoler in very doleful manner replied, " Alas, " wife, I held my peace becauſe he told me " you were doubly and trebly allied to that " race; for he did not talk of your not being " ſpotleſs on account of ſwiniſhneſs, but for not " eating that fleſh. Then he called me Jew," quoth ſhe, " and you could take it ſo calmly. " Brave times! is that the regard you have for " the honour of Donna Anna Moraez, the " daughter of Eſtefania Rubio, and John de " Madrid, both of them well known to God " and all the world." " Daughter to John de " Madrid," ſaid I. " To John de Madrid of Aunnon," cried ſhe. " By the Lord," quoth I, " the " rogue that ſaid ſo is a Jew, a Sodomite, and a " cuckold." Then turning to them, I went on, "The honoured John de Madrid, whoſe " ſoul reſt in peace, was my father's own couſin " german, and I will make it appear what he " was, and whence he came, for it concerns me; " and if once I get out of priſon, I'll make the " dog eat his words. I have my pedigree here " in town in gold letters, which makes out both " families." They were all overjoyed with their new relation, and much encouraged to hear of the pedigree; and at the ſame time I had no ſuch thing, nor did I know who they were. The huſband began to ſift out the point of kindred, coming to particulars, but I to prevent being catched in a lie, made as if I were going out in a paſſion, ſwearing and curſing. They all held me, deſiring no more might be ſaid of the matter. Every now and then I would let fly, John de Madrid, what a pedigree I have of his. Another time, as if I were muſing, I dropt, John de Madrid the elder, father to John de Madrid, was married to Ann de Azevedo the Burly, and then I was huſhed a little longer. In ſhort, I managed this trick ſo well, that the gaoler kept me at bed and board in his houſe; and then the honeſt clerk, what at his requeſt, and what for the bribe I gave him, ordered the buſineſs ſo well, that the old woman went out foremoſt upon a dapple gray aſs, inſtead of the cart uſed in England, with a crier before her, making proclamation that ſhe was a thief, and cloſe at her heels the hangman, laying her on as he had been directed by the gentlemen of the long robe. Then followed all my companions upon braying palfries, bareheaded and faced, thus to be expoſed to public ſhame, like ſtanding on the pillory, and ſo ragged that they could not hide their nakedneſs. After this ſolemnity they were baniſhed for ſix years. For my part I was bailed out with the aſſiſtance of the clerk; and the other at the court played his part, for he changed his tone, ſpoke low, ſkipped over ſome words, and ſwallowed whole ſentences.

CHAP. V.

How I took a Lodging, fell in Love, pretended to be a Conjuror, and the Misfortune that befel me.

BEING out of priſon, I found myſelf all alone, and deſtitute of friends, though I was told they were travelling towards Seville upon the public charity; yet I would not follow them, but went away to a lodging, where I found a fair, clear ſkinned wench, free, pleaſant, ſometimes thruſting herſelf into all companies, and other whiles drawing back, and playing the coy one. She liſped a little, was afraid of mice, valued herſelf upon her hands; and the better to ſhow them, always ſnuffed the candles, carved up the meat at table, and held them up at church, in the ſtreet was always pointing where every body lived, ſitting in company continually contrived to be pinning up her headclothes; and of all games loved to play at draughts, becauſe then her hands were never off the board. She would frequently yawn, though ſhe had no need, to ſhow her teeth, and then croſs her mouth; and in ſhort the whole houſe had ſo much of her hands, that her very father and mother were out of patience with them. They entertained me very well in their houſe, for they made it their buſineſs to let lodgings, and could receive but three at once, which, at this time, were myſelf, a Portugueſe, and a Catalonian. All of them were very courteous to me; I liked the wench well enough by way of diverſion, and thought it a conveniency to have her in the houſe. I courted her, told her abundance of pleaſant ſtories I had picked up to paſs the time; brought them home news, though there were none abroad; did them all the ſervice I could, provided it coſt nothing; perſuaded them

I underſtood witchcraft, and was a conjurer, and could make ſhow as if the houſe were ſinking, or all in a flame, without doing the leaſt harm; all which the credulous fooliſh women eaſily believed. All the family was civil and kind to me; but all this did not amount to love, for being but indifferently clad, though I had ſomewhat mended my apparel with the help of the gaoler, keeping up the kindred by continual ſponging at his houſe; they did not take ſo much notice of it as I could have wiſhed. To gain the reputation of being a man of wealth, though I concealed it, I contrived to ſend ſome of my acquaintance to inquire for me when I was not at home. One of theſe came and inquired for Don Ramiro de Guzman, for I had told them that was my name, having been informed by my friends that changing of names was not expenſive, and might prove very advantageous. The man, I ſay, inquired for Don Ramiro, a rich merchant, who had lately farmed two branches of the revenue of the king. Neither the old nor young landlady knew me by this deſcription, and therefore anſwered, that no ſuch man lived there, but only one Don Ramiro de Guzman, who was rather ragged than rich, a little fellow, hard favoured, and poor. That is the perſon I want, replied the man; and as light as you make of him, I would deſire no more, if it were God's will, than as much as he is worth above 2000 ducats a-year. He told them a great many more lies of this ſort; they ſtood amazed, and he left them a ſham bill of exchange he pretended he had on me for 9000 ducats, deſiring them to get me to accept it. Both mother and daughter gave credit to my wealth, and immediately pricked me down for a huſband. I came home very unconcerned, as if I knew nothing of the matter; immediately they gave me the bill of exchange, ſaying, Wealth and love are hardly to be concealed, Don Ramiro, it is very well that you make us ſuch ſtrangers to what you are, when you know we have ſo much kindneſs for you. I made as if I was diſpleaſed at his leaving the bill, and went away to my chamber. It was pleaſant to ſee how they changed their notes as ſoon as they thought I had money; they ſaid every thing became me, admired every word I ſpoke, and I was the moſt accompliſhed perſon in the world.

Perceiving they had bit at the bait I had laid for them, I made the wench acquainted with my affections, which ſhe received with much joy, returning a thouſand loving expreſſions; and ſo we parted for that time. The next night, the more to confirm them in the conceit of my wealth, I ſhut myſelf up in my chamber, which was parted from theirs only by a thin wall of lath and plaſter, and taking out fifty crowns, counted them over ſo often that they reckoned ſix thouſand. This contrivance of making them believe I was rich, ſucceeded as well as I could wiſh, for their whole ſtudy was to pleaſe and make much of me. The Portugueſe, who lodged in the houſe with me, was called Don Vaſco de Meneſes, and was knight of the famous order of Chriſt in Portugal, which in Spain they reckon only fit for Jews and ſuch as are deſcended from them. He wore a mourning cloak, a pair of boots, a little band, and large whiſkers, and was paſſionately in love with Donna Perenguella de Reboledo, for that was our miſtreſs's name. When he courted her, he would make long ſpeeches, ſigh as bitterly as a holy ſiſter at a ſermon, and ſing very ſcurvily. There was continual bickering between him and the Catalonian, who was the moſt wretched miſerable creature that ever God put life into; for, like a tertian ague, he fed but once in three days, and then his bread was ſo hard, that it had broke ſeveral of his teeth. His way of making love was looking big and bullying, though at the ſame time he had no more heart than a hen, and cackled as much. Theſe two perceiving I had got the ſtart of them in the amorous intrigue, made it their whole buſineſs to rail at me. The Portugueſe ſaid I was a ſhabby louſy ſcoundrel; the Catalonian gave out that I was a pitiful coward. I knew all they ſaid, and ſometimes heard it, but did not think fit to make any reply. In ſhort, the wench gave me a full hearing, and received my *billet douxs*, which I began, according to the laudable cuſtom, with, "Pardon my preſumption;" "The power of your beauty," &c. Then I went on with the terms of paſſion and flames, and feigned myſelf her ſlave, ſealing it with a heart ſtruck through with a dart. After all this ceremony, we came to plain thee and thou, and to rivet the notion of my quality, already conceived, I went abroad, hired a mule, and muffling myſelf up in my cloak, and changing my voice, aſked for myſelf, inquiring whether Don Ramiro de Guzman, lord of Valcerado and Vellorete, lived there. The wench made anſwer, Here is a gentleman of that name, of a low ſtature, and deſcribed me. I replied, he was the man, and deſired her to tell him, that Diego de Solarzana, his ſteward, was going to receive his rents, and called as he went by, to kiſs his hand. Having left this meſſage, I went away, and came home awhile after.

They received me with the greateſt joy imaginable, complaining that I would not let them know I was lord of Valcerado and Vellorete, and delivered the meſſage they had for me. This made the wench mad to ſecure ſuch a rich huſband, and ſo ſhe contrived that I ſhould talk with her at one o'clock in the morning, getting out of a gallery upon the tiles her window looked over.

The devil, who is always contriving of miſchief, ſo ordered it, that at night, being eager to improve that opportunity, I went up into the gallery, and getting out of it upon the tiles, where I was to entertain my lady, my feet ſlipped, and I came down upon a neighbour's houſe, who was a notary, with ſuch force, that I broke all the tiles, and left the print of them in my ſides. The dreadful noiſe waked half the houſe, and fancying there had been thieves, for that ſort of people are always apprehenſive of them, they came out upon the top of the houſe. I would have hid myſelf behind a chimney, which made the ſuſpicion the greater; for the notary, with the aſſiſtance of two ſervants, and a brother, beat me like a ſtock-fiſh, and [illegible] me in the preſence of my miſtreſs, without any regard to what I could ſay for myſelf. She laughed heartily, becauſe having told her before that I could play abundance of odd pranks by the help of art magic, ſhe concluded the fall had been only a trick to make ſport, and therefore lay calling to me to come up, for I had done enough. This and the beating made me roar out unmercifully; and the beſt of it was, that ſhe believed it was all ſham, and laughed immoderately. The notary began to form a proceſs, and becauſe he heard ſome keys rattle in my pocket, he not only ſaid, but writ it down, that they were picklocks, though they were ſhowed him, and it was impoſſible to beat it out of him. I told him I was Don Ramiro de Guzman, at which he laughed heartily. Seeing myſelf in a wretched condition, unmercifully beaten before my miſtreſs, and like to be hurried away to gaol with a ſcandalous name, though innocent, I knew not what courſe to take. I fell upon my knees before the notary, and begged of him for the love of God, but all that would not prevail with him to quit me. Hitherto we were ſtill upon the tiles, for theſe people have never the more conſcience for being the nearer heaven; they reſolved to carry me down, as they did through a ſkylight that was over a kitchen.

CHAP. VI.

The Event of this Diſaſter, how I bilked my Lodging, and other Adventures.

I HAD not one wink of ſleep all that night, thinking on my misfortune, which was not my falling upon the tiles, but into the cruel and mercileſs clutches of the notary; and when I called to mind the pretended picklocks he had found in my pocket, and how many leaves he had writ of my proceſs, I perceived there is nothing in nature increaſes ſo faſt as a crime, when a notary has the handling of it. I ſpent the night in contriving; ſometimes I reſolved to beg *him* for Jeſus Chriſt's ſake; but then reflecting how he was uſed, when upon earth, by men of that kidney, I was ſoon off of it. I tried ſeveral times to unbind myſelf, but he preſently heard me, and came to ſee if all was faſt; for he was more watchful, ſtudying how to make out a lie, than I was to clear myſelf. He got up by break of day, and was dreſſed ſo early, that there was no creature ſtirring in the whole houſe beſides himſelf, and the devil that prompted him; [illegible] laid hold of a good leather belt, ſtrapped me ſoundly with it over and over again, and reproved me ſeverely for the vile ſin of thieving, as being a thing he was ſo well acquainted with himſelf. This was the poſture we were in, he laying on me, and I almoſt reſolved to give him money, which is the only thing in nature that mollifies thoſe ſtony hearts. By this time my miſtreſs, who had ſeen my fall and cudgelling, being convinced it was a real misfortune, and no enchantment, had, by her earneſt prayers and entreaties, prevailed upon the Portugueſe and Catalonian to come to my aſſiſtance, as they did. The notary hearing them ſpeak to me, immediately drew out his pen to inſert them into his proceſs, as acceſſaries. The Portugueſe had not patience to hear it, but let fly ſome ill language, telling him, he was a man of quality, and the king's ſervant, and that I was a very honeſt gentleman, and it was very knaviſhly done to bind me after that manner. This ſaid, he began to unbind me, and the notary to cry out for help. In came two ſervants of his, half bum-bailiffs and half porters, treading upon their own cloaks, and tearing their bands, as they uſe to do, to make it appear as if they had been beaten in the execution of their office, and roared out for all people to aid and aſſiſt them in the king's name. However, the Portugueſe and Catalonian unbound me, and the notary perceiving there was nobody to ſtand by him, ſaid, "I vow to God I am not to be ſo "ſerved, and were not you, gentlemen, perſons "of ſuch worth, it might coſt you dear; however, order theſe witneſſes to be contented, "and take notice, that I ſerve you generouſly "without any proſpect of intereſt." I underſtood the knack; took out a piece of eight and gave it him, and had a very good mind to return the beating he had given me, but forbore rather than own the receipt of it, and went away with them, returning hearty thanks for my deliverance, my face all bruiſed with the cuffs, and my back wealled with cudgelling. The Catalonian made very good ſport, and adviſed the wench to marry me to invert the proverb, "That I might not be cuckolded firſt and "beaten after, but firſt beaten and then cuckolded." He called me a bold deſperate fellow, ironically alluding to my cudgelling, which ſly way of his ſtill put me out of countenance. If I happened to go in to give them but a friendly viſit, he preſently began a diſcourſe of thraſhing, of canes and cudgels.

Finding myſelf thus run down, and that they began to diſcover the cheat of my riches, I laid [illegible] how to get away from the houſe and carry off my equipage, without paying for my diet or lodging, which amounted to ſome money. I agreed with one Licentiate Brandalagas, of the town of Hornillos, and two friends of his, that they ſhould come and ſeize upon me. They came at the day appointed, told the landlady they were ſent by the inquiſition, and charged her with ſecrecy. The whole family quaked for fear, becauſe I had pretended to them that I was a conjurer. They ſpoke not a word againſt carrying me off, but when they ſaw my equipage moving, they would have made a ſeizure for what I owed, but the others anſwered, That all the goods belonged to the inquiſition. This made them all huſh, they let them go peaceably, and when they were gone, ſaid, They had always dreaded it. The Portugueſe and Catalonian poſitively affirmed, that thoſe who uſed to inquire for me were devils; that I had certainly a familiar ſpirit, and when the women told them how much money I had counted, they ſwore it was no money, though it ſeemed ſo, and the others believed them.

I got clear off, and ſaved all my diet and lodging, and then, with the advice of thoſe that had ſtood my friends, I contrived to alter my dreſs into the genteel faſhion, to put on ſtrait breeches, and a great band, and get a fellow by the name of a page, and two rakes for footmen, as the mode then was. The others encouraged me ſo to do, ſhowing how I might make myſelf at once by that means, getting a wife with a great fortune, by making ſuch a figure, which frequently happened at Madrid; adding, that they would put me in the way, finding out one for my turn, and contriving how I might gain admittance. Covetouſneſs prevailing, and the deſire of a wife, I conſented, ſearched all the brokers ſhops, bought my wedding clothes, hired a horſe, and mounted in great ſtate that very day, but could not light on a footman. Away I made to the high ſtreet, and ſtopped at a ſaddler's ſhop, as if I were buying ſome furniture. Two gentlemen on horſeback accoſted me, Whether I was about buying a rich embroidered ſaddle and houſing I had in my hand? I laid it down immediately, ſaying, it was at their ſervice, if they liked it, and kept them awhile with a thouſand compliments. At length they ſaid they would go and divert themſelves in the Prado, which, at Madrid, is like our Hyde Park, where the ladies go out in their coaches, and the gentlemen on horſeback to take the air. I told them I would wait on them, if they would give me leave; and left word with the ſaddler, that in caſe my pages and footmen came thither, he ſhould ſend them after me, deſcribing the livery to him, which ſaid, I clapped in between the two gentlemen, and away we went. By the way I conſidered with myſelf, that none who ſaw us could poſſibly gueſs or decide to which of us the pages and footmen belonged, or which of us had none. I began to talk very loud of the tilting and other ſports on horſeback at Talevera, and of a piebald horſe I had, highly commending a luſty ſtoned horſe I expected from Cordova. Every page or footman I met on horſeback I ſtopped, aſking, Whoſe it was? then talked of his marks like a jockey, and aſked, Whether he was to be ſold? Then I would make him take a turn or two up and down the ſtreet, and though there were no fault, would find one in the bridle, and tell him how to mend it. Fortune ſo ordered it, that I met with ſeveral opportunities of ſhowing my talent. The gentlemen went muſing, and, as I fancied, thinking with themſelves, What upſtart country 'ſquire is this? One of them had a plain badge of knighthood on his breaſt, the other his hanging at a chain ſet with diamonds; and therefore to amuſe them, I ſaid, I was looking out to buy ſome choice horſes for myſelf and a kinſman of mine, that were to be at ſome ſports on horſeback. When we came to the Prado, I took my feet out of the ſtirrups, turning my heels out and walked eaſily, with my cloak hanging upon one ſhoulder, and my hat in my hand. Every body gazed at me; one ſaid, "I have ſeen that ſpark walk on foot;" another, "The ſcoundrel makes a pretty figure;" I made as if I did not hear them and walked on. The two gentlemen went up to a coach full of ladies, and deſired me to banter awhile. I left the ſide where the young ones were, and went to the other where there was a mother and an aunt, two pleaſant old jades, the one about fifty years of age, the other little leſs. I told them a thouſand amorous lies, and they liſtened to them; for there is no woman, though never ſo old, but has a good conceit of herſelf; offered to treat them, and aſked, Whether the other ladies were married? They replied they were maids, and it was eaſy enough to gueſs at it by their talk. Then I made the uſual compliment, wiſhing they might ſee them well preferred to their mind, and they were much taken with it. Next they aſked me how I ſpent my time at court? to which I anſwered, That I kept out of the way from a father and mother, who would fain marry me, againſt my will, to a woman that was ugly; fooliſh, and of a mean family, only becauſe ſhe had a vaſt portion; and for my part, ladies, I had rather have a wife well born, in her ſmock, than the wealthieſt Jew that is;

For, God be praiſed, my patrimony is worth about forty thouſand ducats a-year; and if I ſucceed in a law ſuit, which goes hitherto well on my ſide, I ſhall want no more. The aunt hearing this account, very haſtily cried, "Lord, " Sir, I admire you for that humour, do not " marry without you like, and with a woman " of a good family, for I do aſſure you, that " though I am not very rich, I have refuſed to " marry off my niece, who has had very rich " pretenders, becauſe they were not of quality. " She is poor, it is true, for her portion is but ſix " thouſand ducats; but as for birth ſhe is infe" rior to none." I do not queſtion that, Madam, ſaid I. By this time the damſels had ended their diſcourſe with the gentlemen, aſking a collation. The two gazed upon one another, and began to ſhrink for fear; but I laying hold of the opportunity, told them, I was ſorry my pages were out of the way, becauſe I had nobody to ſend home for ſome boxes of ſweetmeats. They returned thanks, and I deſired them to be the next day at the ſummer-houſe in the Prado, and I would ſend them a cold treat. They accepted of the invitation, told me where they lived, and inquired after my quarters; ſo the coach went off, and my companions and I made towards our home. They obſerving that I was ſo generous in offering the treat, began to take a fancy to me, and the more to oblige me, deſired I would ſup with them that night. I ſtood off a little, but not too long, and ſupped with them, ſending out ſeveral times to ſeek my ſervants, and ſwearing I would turn them away. When it ſtruck ten, I told them, that was the appointed time for an amorous intrigue, and therefore begged they would excuſe me for that time, and ſo went away; firſt engaging them to meet the next day at the ſummer-houſe. From them I went to deliver the hired horſe to the owner, and thence home, where I found my companions playing at all-fours; told them what had happened, the engagement I had made; we reſolved to ſend the collation without fail, and to lay out two hundred royals on it. Having thus ordered affairs, we went to bed, where I own I could not ſleep all night, for thinking how I ſhould beſtow the portion, for I could not reſolve, whether it were better with it to build a good houſe, or to put it out to intereſt, not knowing which would be moſt advantageous.

CHAP. VII.

How the Collation was managed, with other Accidents and notable Misfortunes.

In the morning we got up to provide the plate, ſervants and collation; and there being nothing in this world but money can command, as being a thing worſhipped by all men. I found a nobleman's butler, that furniſhed plate, and undertook to wait himſelf with three of his fellow-ſervants. The forenoon was ſpent in diſpoſing affairs, and after dinner I hired a nag, and at the appointed time ſet out for the ſummer-houſe. I had abundance of papers ſticking out of my pockets; beſides that, my coat being unbuttoned, ſome peeped out at my boſom, as if I had been a man of mighty buſineſs. When I came to the place, the ladies and gentlemen were there; the former received me with much ſhow of love, and the latter talked to me by plain THEE and THOU, in token of familiarity. I had told them my name was Don Philip Triſtian, and nothing was to be heard in all their mouths but Don Philip and Don Philip; but I told them I had been ſo entirely taken up with ſome buſineſs of the king's, and the accounts of my eſtate, that I had much ado to be as good as my word, and therefore they muſt expect a collation provided in a hurry. By this time the butler came with all his tackle, plate and ſervants; the gentlemen and ladies looked at me and held their peace. I ordered him to go into the eating-room and lay the cloth, whilſt we went to divert ourſelves at the fiſh-ponds. The old women drew near to fawn and flatter, and I was glad to ſee the young girls barefaced, for ſince I was born, I never ſaw ſo delicate a creature as that was I deſigned for my wife. A ſkin as white as alabaſter, delicate fair hair, a curious freſh colour in her cheeks, a little mouth, fine ſmall teeth ſtanding cloſe together, a well ſhaped noſe, large black eyes, tall of ſtature, charming hands, and ſhe liſped a little. The other was not amiſs, but more wanton, and I was jealous ſhe had been handled. We went to the fiſh-ponds, ſaw all that could be ſeen, and by her talk I found that my intended bride would have been in danger in Herod's days, of being taken in among the innocents. In ſhort, ſhe had not a grain of ſenſe; however, having never deſigned them for counſellors or jeſters, but only to lie with them, and it being pleaſanter, as Ariſtotle ſays, to lie with a handſome woman, though a fool, than with one of wit that is ugly; I always pitch upon thoſe that are propereſt for the uſe I would have them. This conſideration comforted me, we went towards the banqueting-houſe, and as I paſſed along, ſome twig of the hedge got hold of the lace of my band, and tore it a little; the young lady ſtepped and pinned it with a ſilver pin, and her mother bid me ſend it to her houſe the next day, and Donna Anna, ſo the maiden was called, would mend it. All the treat was in excellent order, hot and cold, fruit and ſweetmeats. When the cloth was taken away, I ſpied a gentleman coming along the garden with two ſervants after him, and who ſhould this be but my old maſter Don Diego Coronel. He drew near, and ſeeing me in this habit, could not take his eyes off me, talked to the women, calling them couſins, and all the time turned to look again and again. I kept talking to the butler, and the other two gentlemen, being my maſter's friends, were in deep diſcourſe with him. He aſked them, as afterwards appeared, my name, and they anſwered, it was Don Philip Triſtian, a very honeſt gentleman of a great eſtate. I ſaw him bleſs himſelf, and at length he came up to me before them all, and ſaid, "Sir, will you pardon me, "for, by the Lord, till I heard your name, I "took you for a different perſon than you are; "in my life I never ſaw any thing ſo like a fer-

" vant I had at Segovia, called Pauly, the ſon " of a barber in that town." They all laughed heartily, and I uſed all the art I could to forbear betraying myſelf by bluſhing, and ſaid, I long mightily to ſee that man, becauſe abundance of people had told me I was extremely like him. " Good God," cried Don Diego, " like him, I " never ſaw ſuch reſemblance, his very ſhape, " voice and mein. I declare to you, Sir, it is " prodigious, and I never beheld any ſo exactly " alike." The old women, mother and aunt, aſked how it was poſſible that a gentleman of ſuch quality ſhould be ſo like that mean ſcoundrel? And that I might conceive no jealouſy of them, one ſaid, " I know Don Philip very well, " it was he that entertained us at Ocanna, by " my huſband's order." I took the cue, and anſwered, " I ſhould always be ready to do " them all the ſervice I could in all parts." Don Diego offered his ſervice, and begged pardon for the affront of taking me for the barber's ſon, " adding, " Sir, you will ſcarce believe it, but his " mother was a witch, his father a thief, his uncle the hangman, and he himſelf the wickedeſt baſe fellow in the world." It is eaſy to gueſs what I felt, hearing ſuch ſcandalous things ſaid of me to my face; I ſat upon thorns, though I did all I could to diſſemble my uneaſineſs. My two new acquaintance and I took our leaves, and Don Diego went into the coach with the ladies. Then he aſked them what was the meaning of the treat, and their being with me? the mother and aunt told him, I was heir to ſo many thouſand ducats a-year, and had a mind to marry Nancy; that he might inquire into the matter, and he would ſee how convenient it was, and how advantageous to their family. This diſcourſe held them home, which was near the church of St. Philip. My comrades and I went together to their houſe, as we had done the night before, and they having a mind to fleece me, aſked me whether I would play. I gueſſed at their meaning, and ſet to it, the cards were brought, I let them win at firſt, but ſoon fetched it about, won about three hundred royals, took my leave and went home.

There I found my two companions, the Licentiate Brandalagas, and Peter Lopez, who were practiſing new cheats upon the dice. As ſoon as they ſaw me, they left off to inquire how I ſped. I only told them that I had been in great danger; how I had met with Don Diego, and how I came off. They comforted and encouraged me to proceed, and not to deſiſt from the enterpriſe by any means. We had now notice given us that they uſed to play at honſkenet at an apothecary's houſe cloſe by. I underſtood the game at that time tolerably well, had cards made for the purpoſe, and knew all ſorts of cheats, ſo we reſolved to go put in for the plate among them. I ſent my friends before me, who coming, aſked them, whether they would pleaſe to play with a Monk of the Order of St. Benedict, who was juſt come to town to be cured of a tedious diſtemper among his relations and friends, and was well ſtocked with crowns and ducats? This ſet them all agog, and they cried, "Let the friar come in God's "name. He is a man of note in the order," added Peter Lopez, "and being of the mona-"ſtery, has a mind to divert a few hours, and "does it only for company's ſake." "Let him "come," quoth they, "we do not care what "his motive is." "We tell you ſo much in "regard to the privacy it requires," anſwered Brandalagas. "Enough," ſaid the man of the houſe, "you need ſay no more." This ſatisfied them that the thing was ſo, and the lie went down glib. My two ſupporters came for me, and I was dreſſed with my nightcap on, in a Benedictine habit, which I had got by the wheel of fortune in my rambles, a pair of ſpectacles on my noſe, and ſhort bruſhy beard, to ſhow as if it were grown ſince my ſickneſs. I walked in very demurely, ſat down; and we began to play. They all combined to put upon me, but I ſwept all before me, being much ſharper at it than they, ſo that in about three hours time, I won upwards of a thouſand three hundred royals. I ſcattered ſome ſmall bounty, and took my leave with the uſual compliment of, "The Lord be praiſed," charging them not to be ſcandalized to ſee me play, for it was mere diverſion, and nothing elſe. They who had loſt their money, curſed themſelves to the pit of hell. I took my leave again, away we went, got to our lodging about half an hour after one, parted our booty, and ſo to bed.

This was ſome ſatisfaction to me for the unlucky accident before it; I got up in the morning to hire a horſe, but they were all let, by which I perceived there were more in my circumſtances beſides myſelf. To walk the ſtreets afoot did not look well, eſpecially at that time. Not knowing how to mend myſelf, I went towards St. Philip's church, where I found a lawyer's footman with a horſe in his hand, waiting for his maſter, who had juſt alighted to hear maſs in that church. I clapt four royals in his hand, to let me ride two or three turns along the next ſtreet, where my miſtreſs lived. He conſented; I mounted, rode twice up and down the ſtreet, without ſeeing any body, but the third turn Donna Anna looked out. When I ſaw her, thinking to gallant her, ſhowing my horſemanſhip, and being but an indifferent jockey, and unacquainted with the horſe's qualities, I gave him two laſhes, reining him at the ſame time; he reared firſt, then ſtruck out behind, ſet arunning full ſpeed, ſo that I came clear over his head into a puddle. I had no other recourſe in this pitiful plight, all beſet with boys, and in the preſence of my miſtreſs, but to cry out, "A curſed dog, my Sorrel would "never have done ſo. I ſhall pay for theſe "mad pranks one time or other. They told "me he was unlucky, and yet I would needs "be trying tricks with him." By this time the footman brought me the horſe again, for he ſtopt as ſoon as he had thrown me; I mounted again, and Don Diego Coronel, who lived in the ſame houſe with his kinſwoman, hearing the noiſe, looked out. The ſight of him ſtartled me very much; he aſked, "Whether I had "any hurt?" I anſwered, No, though at the ſame time one of my legs was almoſt crippled. The footman preſſed me hard to give him his horſe, for fear his maſter ſhould come out of the church and ſee me, for he was going to court. It was my misfortune, that as he was calling me to be gone, the lawyer came behind us, and knowing his ſteed, ran at the footman, laying him about the head and face with his fiſt, and aſking him, as loud as he could cry, "How he "durſt have the impudence to let any body "ride his horſe?" and what was worſt of all, he turned to me, and in a very angry manner, "Bid me get down in the name of God. All this was in the full view of my miſtreſs and Don Diego Coronel, which put me as much out of countenance as if I had been whipped at the cart's tail. I was wonderfully caſt down and melancholy, and with good cauſe, to have two ſuch misfortunes befal me upon ſo ſmall a ſpot of ground. In fine, I was fain to alight, the lawyer mounted, and went his way; and I the better to palliate the buſineſs, ſtaid in the ſtreet, talking to Don Diego, and ſaid, "I never "mounted ſuch an unlucky jade in all my days. "My cream-coloured horſe is yonder by St. "Philip's church, and is very hard mouthed "when he ſets arunning. I was telling ſome "there how I uſed to ride him at full ſpeed, and "take him off at one check. They told me, I "could not do it with a horſe that ſtood there, "which was the lawyer's you ſaw; I reſolved "to try; you cannot imagine what a reſtive "jade it is, and has ſuch a baſe ſaddle, that it

" was a wonder he did not kill me. It was ſo, " anſwered Don Diego; and yet, Sir, you ſeem " to feel ſome hurt in that leg. I do ſo, replied " I, and therefore I'll go take my own horſe " and get home." The young lady was fully ſatisfied that all I ſaid was true, for I could perceive ſhe was much concerned at my fall; but Don Diego, who ſaw farther, grew miſtruſtful upon what had happened with the lawyer in the ſtreet.

This proved the cauſe of my ruin, beſides many other unlucky accidents that befel me, and the greateſt of all, that when I went home and came to a cheſt, where in a portmantua I had left all the remains of my inheritance, and what I won at play, except only an hundred royals I had about me, I found my good friends the Licentiate Brandalagas and Peter Lopez had ſeized it, and were fled. This was a mortal ſtroke, and I ſtood amazed, not knowing which way to turn myſelf, and ſaying, " A curſe on " him that puts his truſt in ill gotten wealth, " which goes as it comes." Unhappy man! what ſhall I do? I could not tell whether it were beſt to go myſelf, or ſend a hue and cry after them. I did not like this courſe, becauſe if they ſhould happen to be taken, they would charge me with the diſguiſe of the monk's habit, and other matters, and that was the direct way to the gallows; and as for following of them, I knew not which way. At laſt, for fear of ſpoiling my marriage, which I looked upon as ſecure, and that it would make amends for all loſes, I reſolved to ſtay, and puſh it on vigorouſly. I dined, after dinner hired a horſe, went away towards my miſtreſs's ſtreet, and having no footman, becauſe it was not decent to be ſeen without one, I waited at the corner of the ſtreet, until ſome man paſſed by that looked like one, and away I went after him, making him a footman, though he was none. At the other end of the ſtreet I did the like, ſtanding out of ſight until another went by like the former, and then rode down again. I know not whether it was the certainty of the truth that I was the very ſcoundrel Don Diego ſuſpected, or the freſh cauſe of jealouſy, on account of the lawyer's horſe and footman, or what elſe that did it, but Don Diego took care to inquire who I was, what I lived on, and obſerved all my actions. At laſt he took ſo much pains, that he diſcovered the whole intrigue the ſtrangeſt way that could be imagined, for I preſſed on the buſineſs of matrimony very hotly, plying the ladies continually with letters; and Don Diego being ſo eagerly importuned by them, who were in haſte to conclude it, as he was upon the ſcent after me, met the Licentiate Flechilla, the man I invited myſelf to dine with, when firſt I entered myſelf among the ſharping gang at Madrid before my impriſonment. This man taking it ill that I had not gone to ſee him again, according to promiſe, happening to talk with Don Diego, and knowing I had been his ſervant, told him how I met him when I went to dine with him; and that but two days ago he had met me on horſeback, and I informed him I was going to be married to a great fortune. This was enough for Don Diego, who returning home immediately met with the two knights I had made myſelf ſo familiar with, gave them an account of the whole affair, and deſired them to be ready at night to give me a good thraſhing in his ſtreet, where he would contrive I ſhould be, and they might know me by his cloak, which he would take care I ſhould have on. They agreed, met me immediately in the ſtreet, and all of them carried it ſo fair at that time, that I never thought myſelf ſo ſecure of their friendſhip as then. We continued talking together how to divert ourſelves at night, till towards the cloſe of the evening the two knights took their leave, and went down the ſtreet. Don Diego and I being left by ourſelves, turned towards the church of St. Philip. When we came to the next turning, Don Diego ſaid to me, " Let me beg the favour of you, Don Phi- " lip, to change cloaks with me, for I have oc- " caſion to go this way, and would not be " known." " With all my heart," anſwered I; took his cloak very innocently, and gave him mine in an unhappy hour, offering to go along, and ſtand by him if need were; but he having projected to ſtand by me to break my bones, replied, " He was obliged to go alone, and " therefore deſired me to leave him." No ſooner had I parted from him, but the devil contrived, that two who waited to thraſh me, on account of a wench, thinking, by the cloak, that I was Don Diego, fell on a-cudgelling me as thick as hail; I cried out, and by my voice and face they diſcovered I was the wrong man, at which they ran away, and I was left with my beating, put up three or four good bumps they had raiſed, and made a halt, not daring to go into my miſtreſs's ſtreet a while for fear. At laſt about twelve, which was the time when I talked with her, I came up to the door, where one of Don Diego's friends that waited for me, being ready with a good cudgel, gave me two blows acroſs the ſhins, which laid me flat on the ground; as ſoon as I was down, the other played his part, giving me a ſlaſh acroſs the face from ear to ear: They then took away my cloak, and left me on the ground, ſaying, “This “is the reward of falſe, deceitful, baſe ſcoundrels.” I cried out for help, not knowing to whom I was beholding for that uſage, though, by what they ſaid at parting, I gueſſed it might perhaps be the landlord I had cheated, with the contrivance of being taken up by the inquiſition, or the gaoler I had ſo long impoſed upon, or my companions that fled; for, to ſay the truth, I expected that cut from ſo many places, that I could not be poſitive from whom it might come. Don Diego was the perſon I leaſt ſuſpected, and I was fartheſt from the mark; but ſtill cried out, “Thieves, Thieves,” which at length brought the watch, who took me up, and ſpying a gaſh a quarter long on my face, and that I had no cloak, nor could tell how that misfortune came, they carried me away to a ſurgeon's houſe, where I was dreſſed; then they aſked where I lived, and thither they conducted me. I went to bed, and lay all night awake, full of remorſe and confuſion; my face being cut in two, my body bruiſed, and my legs ſo crippled with the cudgelling, that I could not ſtand, nor had ſcarce any feeling in them. In fine, I was wounded, robbed, and in ſuch a condition, that I could neither follow my friends, nor proceed towards matrimony, nor ſtay in Madrid, nor get away.

CHAP. VIII.

My tedious Cure; what paſſed between my Landlady and me; how I turned Beggar, picked up a conſiderable Sum of Money, and went to Toledo.

THE next morning, by break of day, my landlady appeared at my bed's head. She was a choice old woman, at the years of diſcretion, paſt fifty-five, a great pair of beads in her hand, and a face like a chitterlin, or a walnut ſhell, it was ſo full of furrows. Her name was up in the neighbourhood, and ſo ſhe lay in bed till noon when ſhe pleaſed, and with any body that could fancy it. She promoted pleaſure and contrived delight; her name was Madam de la Guia; her trade to let lodgings at home, and procure for others abroad. Her houſe was never without lodgers all the year round. It was pleaſant to ſee how ſhe inſtructed a young girl in veiling herſelf, teaching her what parts of her face ſhe muſt be ſure to expoſe to ſight. If ſhe had good teeth, ſhe adviſed her to be always a-laughing, though it were at a viſit of condolence; if ſhe had fine hands, ſhe taught her to be always playing with them; if fair hair, to have ſome looſe locks peeping out under the veil; if good eyes, to be continually ogling; and if ſparkling ſmall ones, to ſhut and then open them wide, and be ſure to look up. As for waſhes, and other coſmetics for the ſkin, ſhe would make an Ethiopian as fair of complexion as a Dane; ſo that many women came to her, and went home ſo altered, that their own huſbands did not know them; but her greateſt art conſiſted in putting off reputed virgins, and patching up cracked maidenheads. All this I ſaw performed by the time I had been but eight days in the houſe; and to complete all, ſhe directed the women how to pick pockets, and taught them what pretty expreſſions they ſhould uſe. She ſhowed them how they ſhould wheedle a jewel out of a man; young girls were to do it by way of wit and jeſt, ripe maids as a due, and old women as a piece of reſpect and honour. She put them in the way how to beg dry money, and how to draw rings and other trinkets. Upon occaſion, ſhe quoted ſome famous ones of her own profeſſion at Alcala, at Burgos, and in other parts of Spain where any had gained renown in this art of cullying. I have given this account of her that I may be pitied, conſidering into what hands I was fallen; and the words ſhe ſaid to me may be the more taken notice of: She was always very fond of proverbs, and began her ſpeech after this manner: "A drop of water "continually falling on a ſtone makes a hole "in time; as you ſow, ſo will you reap; if you "walk barefoot among thorns, you muſt expect "to be ſcratched. My child, Don Philip, to "deal plainly, I do not underſtand you, nor can "I conceive how you live. You are young, and "it is no wonder you ſhould be ſomewhat wild, "without conſidering, that even whilſt we ſleep, "we are travelling to our end. I, who have "now one foot in the grave, have the privilege "to tell you ſo much. It is very odd I ſhould "be told that you ſpent much money, and no-"body knows how; and that you have, ſince "you came to town, ſometimes appeared like a "ſcholar, ſometimes a ſharper, and ſometimes "like a gentleman. All this comes of keeping "company; for, my child, tell me where you "herd, and I'll tell you what you are; and "birds of a feather flock together; and many a "good bit is loſt between the lip and the diſh. "Go you fool, if you had a hankering after wo-"men, did not you know that I had always a

" good ſtock of that commodity by me, and " that I live by that trade. I breed them up " to hand, and fit them for that buſineſs, and " then I have them ready at my beck. What " occaſion have you to be drawn away by one " ſcoundrel to-day, and by another raſcal to-" morrow; picking up a dirty drab here, and " a pickell'd jade there, who fleece you to keep " another. I vow and ſwear you had ſaved ma-" ny a crown if you had applied yourſelf to me, " for I am not overfond of money. By my fa-" ther's ſoul, and as I hope for mercy, I would " [illegible] have aſked you now for what is due for " lodging, but that I want it for ſome private " uſes, and to make a little ointment." She had her pots of ointment, though ſhe was neither ſurgeon or apothecary, and if any body greaſed her ſhe anointed herſelf and flew out with the ſmoke. Perceiving that all her diſcourſe and long ſpeech ended in a dun; for though that was her text, ſhe did not begin with it as others do, but made it her concluſion; when I found that I was not at all to ſeek for the occaſion of her loving viſit, which was the firſt ſhe made me whilſt I lodged in her houſe, excepting only one day, when ſhe came to anſwer for herſelf, becauſe ſhe heard I had been told ſome ſtory about her witchcraft, and that when the officers came to ſeize her, ſhe had caſt ſuch a miſt before their eyes, that they could neither find the houſe nor the ſtreet. She came then to tell me it was all a miſtake, for they meant another of her name; and no wonder, for there were more of the name and profeſſion. I paid her down the money, and as I was telling it out, ill fortune, which always attends me, and the devil, who never forgets to plague me, ſo ordered it, that the officers came to ſeize her for a ſcandalous liver, and had information that her gallant was in the houſe. They came directly into my room, and finding me in bed, and her by me, they laid hold of us both, gave me half a ſcore good bangs, and dragged me out of bed. Two others held her faſt, ſaluting her with the titles of bawd and witch. Who would have thought it of a woman that lived as I have ſaid. The noiſe the conſtables made, and my cries, gave the alarm to the gallant, who was a fruiterer, and lay in the next room within, he ſet arunning, they obſerving it, and being informed by another lodger in the houſe that I was not the man, ſcoured after, and laid hold of him, leaving me well beaten and my hair torn off; yet for all I had endured, I could not forbear laughing to hear how the dogs complimented the old woman.

One cried, "How gracefully you will look in a "cart, mother; by my troth it will be a great "ſatisfaction to me to ſee a thouſand or two of "rotten oranges and turnip tops fly after you." Another ſaid, "There is care taken that you "ſhall make a good ſhow and be well attended." At laſt they catched her bully, bound them both, begged my pardon, and left me to myſelf.

It was ſome comfort to me to ſee my good landlady in the way to preferment, ſo that all my care was to be in a readineſs that I might throw one rotten orange at her; though conſidering what a maid of hers, who was left behind, told me, I much doubted whether ever they could ſecure her in priſon, for ſhe talked of flying, and ſome other matters I did not at all like. I lay eight days in the houſe under the ſurgeon's hands, and was ſcarce able to go abroad at the end of them, for they were fain to ſtitch up my face, and I could not go without crutches. By this time my money was ſpent, for the hundred royals all went in lodging, diet, and cure; ſo that to avoid further expences, when my treaſure was gone, I reſolved to go abroad upon crutches, and ſell my linen and clothes, which were very good. I did ſo, and with part of the money bought an old leather jerkin, a canvaſs waiſtcoat, a patched beggar's great coat down to my ancles, gamaſhes on my legs, and great clouted ſhoes, the hood of the great coat on my head, a large braſs crucifix about my neck, and a pair of beads in my hand. A mumper, who was a maſter at his trade, taught me the doleful tone and proper phraſes for begging, ſo I began immediately to practiſe it about the ſtreets. Sixty royals I had left I ſewed up in my doublet, and ſo ſet up for a beggar, much confiding in my cant. I went about the ſtreets for a whole week, howling in a diſmal tone, and repeating my leſſon after this manner: "Merciful Chriſtians of the Lord, take pity on a poor diſtreſſed, miſerable, wounded, and maimed creature, that has no comfort of his life." This was my working-day note, but on Sundays and holidays I altered my voice, and ſaid, "Good charitable people, for Chriſt Jeſus's ſake, give one farthing or a halfpenny to the poor cripple, whom the Lord has viſited." Then I ſtood a little, which does good ſervice, and went on again. "See my poor limbs were blaſted, unhappy wretch that I am, as I was working in a vineyard; I loſt the uſe of all my precious limbs; for I was as ſtrong and as ſound as any of you are, the Lord be for ever prai-

"ſed, and preſerve your health and limbs." Thus the farthings came dropping in by ſhoals: I got abundance of money, and was in a way of getting much more, had I not been thwarted by an ill-looked luſty young fellow, lame of both arms, and with but one leg, who plied my very walks in a wheelbarrow, and picked up more pence than I did, though he begged not half ſo genteelly; for he had a hoarſe voice, which ended in a ſqueak, and ſaid, "Faithful "ſervants of Jeſu Chriſt, behold how the Lord "hath afflicted me for my ſins; give one far-"thing to the poor, God will reward you," and then he added, "for the ſweet Jeſu's ſake." This brought him a mighty revenue, and I obſerved it, and for the future I cut off the *s*, and ſaid only *Jeſu*, becauſe I perceived it took with the ſimple people. In ſhort, I altered my phraſes as occaſion ſerved, and there was no end of my gettings. I had both my legs bound up in a leather bag, and lay in a ſurgeon's porch, with a beggar that plied at the corner of a ſtreet, one of the erranteſt knaves that ever God put life into, very rich, was as it were our ſuperior, and earned as much as all of us. He was broken bellied, and it hung out in a bunch; beſides, he bound his arm hard with a rope above the ſhoulder, which made his hand look as if it were lame, ſwelled, and had an inflammation. He lay flat on his back, with all the rupture naked, which was as big as his head, and cried, "Behold my miſery, ſee how the Lord chaſtiſes "his ſervants." If a woman happened to paſs by, "Sweet beautiful lady, the Lord bleſs your "dear ſoul." Moſt of them would give him an alms for calling them handſome, and would make that their way to their viſits, though never ſo much about. If any ragged ſoldier came by, he called him "Noble Captain;" if any other ſort of man, "Good worthy gentleman;" if he ſaw any body in a coach, "Right Honour-"able Lord;" and if a clergyman on a mule, "Moſt Reverend Archdeacon." In ſhort, he was a moſt intolerable flatterer, and had particular ways of begging for holidays. I contracted ſuch intimacy with him, that he acquainted me with a ſecret, which in a few days made us rich; and was, that he kept three little boys, who begged about the ſtreets, ſtole every thing that came in their way, brought to him, and he was the receiver; beſides, he had two ſmall children that learned to pick pockets, and he went halves with them. Being ſo well inſtructed by ſuch an able maſter, I took to the ſame courſes, and he provided me with fit inſtruments for my purpoſe. In leſs than a month's time I had got above forty crowns clear, beſides all extravagant expences, and at laſt, deſigning that we ſhould go away together, he diſcloſed to me the greateſt ſecret and cunningeſt deſign that ever beggar had in his head, which we both joined in; and was, that between us we every day ſtole four or five children, which being cried, we preſently appeared, inquired what marks they had to be known by, and ſaid, "Good God, Sir, I found this child at ſuch a "time, and had I not come as I did, a cart had "run over it, but I have taken care of it." They readily paid us the reward, and it throve ſo well, that I got above fifty crowns more, and by this time my legs were well, though I ſtill wore them wrapped in clouts. I reſolved to leave Madrid and go away to Toledo, where I knew nobody, nor nobody knew me. Having ſet this reſolution, I bought an old ſuit of gray clothes, a ſword and bands, took leave of Valcazar, the beggar I laſt mentioned, and went about the inns to find ſome conveniency to go to Toledo.

CHAP. IX.

How I turned Player, Poet, and Gallant. The Misfortunes that enſued, till I quitted the Employment.

At an inn I met with a company of ſtrolling players, who were going to Toledo, and had three carts. It pleaſed God that among the gang I found one who had been my companion at Alcala, left the ſchool, and was turned actor. I told him what a mind I had to go to Toledo, and he had much ado to know me, the ſcar acroſs my face had ſo altered me, and he could not forbear bleſſing himſelf, ſtanding in admiration. In concluſion for a ſmall ſpill of money, he was ſo much my friend as to prevail with the reſt to let me go with them. We were all higgledy-piggledy, men and women together, and I was mightily taken with one of the crew, who was the chief dancer, and acted the queen's and other great parts in plays, for ſhe was a notable jilt. Her huſband happened to ſit next to me, and not thinking to whom I ſpoke, but following my lewd inclination of enjoying her, I asked him, "How could a man do to have a little "talk with this woman, that I might ſpend "twenty crowns upon her, for I have a great "liking to her? It does not become me to an-

" ſwer your queſtion, as I am her huſband," replied the man, " nor is it fit I ſhould talk of " any ſuch thing; but to deal ingenuouſly, for " I am nothing partial, ſhe deſerves to have any " money ſpent upon her, for there is not a more " dainty bit of fleſh upon the earth, nor ſuch a " pretty wanton girl." This ſaid, he leaped out of the cart, and got into another, in all likelihood that I might have an opportunity of making my addreſſes to her. I was pleaſed with the man's anſwer, and perceived it may be ſaid of ſuch men, that they had wives as if they had none, perverting the expreſſion to the worſt ſenſe. I laid hold of the opportunity; ſhe aſked me whether I was going, and ſome queſtions concerning my life and circumſtances? and in concluſion, after much talk, referred it to Toledo to act there.

We diverted ourſelves by the way the beſt we could, and I happened to act a piece of a play that I had borne a part in when I was a boy, which I did ſo well, that they took a liking to me, and being informed by my friend, who was in the company of all my misfortunes and hard circumſtances, which I had made him acquainted with, ſhe aſked me, Whether I would make one among them? They ſo highly extolled their ſtrolling courſe of life, and I was then in ſuch want of ſome ſupport, and ſo fond of the wench, that I agreed with the head of them for two years. Writings were ſigned between us to oblige me to ſtay with them, ſo they gave me my allowance and allotted my parts, and thus we came to Toledo. They gave me two or three prologues to get by heart, and ſome other grave parts, which ſuited well with my voice. I applied myſelf to it, and ſpoke the firſt prologue in the town, where we had a ſimile of a ſhip in diſtreſs, and wanting proviſions, which put into that port; I called them noble audience, begging their attentions, pardon for all faults, and ſo went off. There was great clapping of hands, and I was liked on the ſtage. We acted a play, written by one of our actors, and I admired how they ſhould come to be poets, for I thought it belonged only to very learned and ingenious men, and not to perſons ſo extremely ignorant. But it is now come to ſuch a paſs, that every head of them writes plays, and every actor makes drolls and farces; though formerly I remember no plays would go down but what were written by the greateſt wits in Spain. In ſhort, the play was acted the firſt day, and no ſoul could make any thing of it. The ſecond day we began it again, and as God would have it, there was ſome warlike exploit to begin with, and I came upon the ſtage in armour, and with a target on my arm, which was a great mercy, or elſe I had infallibly been pelted to death with oranges, quinces, and all things that came next to hand. Such a ſtorm of hail was never ſeen, and the play deſerved it, for it repreſented a king of Normandy in a hermit's habit, without any ſenſe or reaſon, had two ſcoundrel footmen to make ſport, and when they came to unravel the plot, there was nothing but marrying of all the company, and there was an end; ſo, that to ſay the truth, we had but what we deſerved. We all fell foul of our companion, the pretended poet, and I bidding him conſider what a danger we had eſcaped and take warning by it; he anſwered, he had not made one word of the play, but only picked up bits and ſcraps, ſome from one, and ſome from another, as they came in his way, which he had jumbled together, like a beggar's cloak made of all ſorts of rags; and the ill luck was, that it had not been neatly fine drawed. He owned, that all the players who wrote plays, were obliged to make reſtitution, becauſe they only ſtole from all the parts they acted, which was eaſily done, and they were willing to run all hazards in hopes of getting ten or twenty crowns. Beſides, that going about all the country, and being ſhowed plays by ſeveral perſons, they borrowed them to read, and then ſtole them, which, when they had done, they only added ſome ſcurvy part and left out another better, and ſo they called it their own; proteſting that no player ever knew how to write a ſcene any other way.

I liked the contrivance, and took a great fancy to try it myſelf, as having ſome ſmall genius for poetry, and being ſomewhat verſed in poets, for I had read Garcilaſſo, and others, and ſo I reſolved to fall into that knack; ſo that with this, and my actreſs, and my own playing, I made a ſhift to live. By that time we had been a month at Toledo, acting ſeveral new plays, and endeavouring to retrieve our firſt fault, I was grown famous, and had given out, that my name was Alonſo, to which the generality added the title of the Cruel, becauſe I had acted a part of that nature, to the great liking of the mob and upper galleries. I had now got ſeveral new ſuits of clothes, and ſome heads of other ſtrollers endeavoured to inveigle me away from my company; but I pretended to criticiſe upon plays, and railed at the moſt celebrated actors, finding fault with one man's geſtures, cenſuring another's gravity, and allowing another to be a tolerable actor. My advice was always taken in contriving the ſcenes, and adorning the ſtage; and if any play came to be offered, it was left to me to examine. Being encouraged by this applauſe, I launched out as a poet in a ſong, and then wrote a ſmall farce, which was well approved of. Next I ventured at a play, and that it might gain reſpect, made it all of devotion, and full of the Bleſſed Virgin. It began with muſic, had fine ſhows of ſouls departed, and devils appearing, as was the faſhion then, with old gibberiſh when they appeared, and ſtrange ſhrieks when they vaniſhed. The mob was mightily pleaſed with my rhyming to Satan, and my long diſcourſes about his falling, or not falling from heaven. In ſhort the play was acted, and well liked, I had more buſineſs than I could turn my hands to, for all ſorts of lovers flocked to me, ſome would have ſongs on their miſtreſs's eyes, others on their foreheads, others on their white hands, and others on their golden locks. There were ſet rates of all ſorts; but I ſold cheap to draw the more cuſtom, becauſe there were other ſhops beſides mine. As for godly ballads, I ſupplied all the country clerks and runners of monaſteries, and the blind men were my beſt friends, for they never allowed leſs than eighty royals, and I always took care they ſhould be bombaſtic, and ſtuffed with cramp words, which neither they nor I underſtood. I brought up many new faſhions in verſe, as tailors do in clothes, and was the firſt that concluded my ſongs like ſermons, praying for grace in this world, and glory in the next.

Thus was I happy as I could wiſh, my pockets full of money, highly in vogue, and in ſuch a proſperous condition, that I aimed at being chief of a company of ſtrollers. My houſe was handſomely furniſhed, for the devil put into my head to buy the old mouldy tapeſtry of taverns to hang my rooms at a cheap rate, all which coſt me about five or ſix crowns; for they afforded a better proſpect than any the king has, for being ſo ragged you might ſee through any part of them, which you cannot do through any of his. The oddeſt thing happened to me one day that ever was heard of, which I will not ſpare to make known, though it be to my ſhame. When I was writing a play, I uſed to ſhut myſelf up at home in the garret, where I kept cloſe and dined. The maid uſed to bring up my dinner and leave it there; and it was my way to act all I wrote, and talk aloud, as if I had been upon the ſtage. As the devil would have it, when the maid was coming up the ſtairs, which were dark and upright, with the diſh of meat and plates in her hand, I was compoſing a ſcene of hunting a bear, and being wholly intent upon my play, cried out as loud as I could,

Fly, fly the bloody bear; take heed, I ſay,
Alas, I'm kill'd, and you'll become its prey.

The poor wench, who was a ſilly Galician, hearing me roar that I was killed, and ſhe in danger to become a prey to the bear, thought it had been real matter of fact, and that I called to her to ſave herſelf. Upon this conceit ſhe took to her heels, and treading on her coats in the confuſion, tumbled down all the ſtairs. The ſoup was ſpilt, the earthen pots broken, and ſhe run out roaring into the ſtreet, "that a bear was "killing a man." I could not be ſo nimble, but that all the neighbours were about me, aſking where the bear was? and I could ſcarce make them believe me, though I told them it was the maid's fooliſh miſtake, for I was only acting a part of a play. I loſt my dinner that day; my companions were told of it, and all the town made ſport with it. Many ſuch accidents befel me whilſt I followed the trade of poetizing, and would not forſake that wicked courſe of life.

It happened, as frequently does to that ſort of people, that the chief of our company being known to have got conſiderably at Toledo, was arreſted for ſome old debts, and thrown into gaol, which broke up our gang, and every one went a ſeveral way. As for my part, though my comrades would have introduced me into other companies, having no great inclination to that calling, for I had followed it out of mere neceſſity; I thought of nothing but taking my pleaſure, being then well dreſſed, and in no want of money. I took my leave of them all, they went their ways; and I, who had propoſed to quit an ill courſe of life, by deſiſting from being a ſtroller, to mend the matter, dropped out of the fryingpan into the fire, for I fell into much worſe, making it my whole buſineſs to gallant grates, and aim at impoſſibilities by courting of nuns. The encouragement I had to commit this madneſs, was, that I underſtood there was a moſt charming nun, at whoſe requeſt I had wrote abundance of little devout paſtorals; and ſhe had taken ſome liking to me on that account, and ſeeing me act Saint John the Evangeliſt in a holiday ſpiritual ſort of play. The good lady made very much of me, and had told me, there was nothing troubled her ſo much as my being a player; for I had pretended to her, that I was the ſon of a gentleman of quality, and therefore ſhe pitied me, and I at laſt reſolved to ſend her the following lines:

"I HAVE quitted the company of players, rather to comply with your deſires, than becauſe "it was otherwiſe convenient for me ſo to do; "but to me all the company in the world, without yours, is ſolitude. I ſhall now have the "more opportunity of being yours, as being abſolutely my own maſter. Let me know when "there will be admittance to the grate, and "that will inform me when I may be happy, "&c."

The runner carried the note, the good nun was wonderfully pleaſed to hear of my change of life, and anſwered me as follows:

"I rather expect to be congratulated, than "to congratulate you on your good fortune; "for my wiſhes and your proſperity are inſeparable. You may be looked upon as recovered out of a deſperate eſtate; it only remains, that you perſevere, as I ſhall do. I "queſtion whether there will be any liberty at "the grate to-day; but do not fail to come at "even-ſong, for there at leaſt we ſhall ſee one "another, and perhaps I may find means to put "ſome trick upon the lady abbeſs."

Farewell.

I liked the note, for the woman was really witty, and very handſome. After dinner I put on the beſt ſuit I uſed to act the gallant in on the ſtage, went to church, pretended to pray, and then began to examine every inch of the grate and veil before the choir, to ſee if I could diſcover her. At length it pleaſed God I had the good fortune, or rather the devil contrived me the ill luck, that I heard the old ſign, I began to cough, ſhe anſwered, that there was a helliſh imitation of a cold, or as if the church had been full of lily of the valley. I was quite weary of coughing, when a tiſſical old woman appeared at the grate, and I diſcovered my miſtake; for this is a very uncertain ſign in a monaſtery, becauſe as it ſerves for a ſign among young ones, it is habitual with old ones, and when a man thinks it a call to catch a nightingale, he finds nothing but an owl. I ſtayed a long time in the church, till even-ſong began, which I heard out, for the admirers of nuns have this madneſs, beſides all the reſt, that they muſt play the hypocrite, and pray againſt their will; beſides, that they never go beyond the eve, being ever in expectation, but the day of enjoyment never comes. I never failed being at even-ſong, and ſtretched out my neck a handful longer than it was, to endeavour to ſee into the choir. The clerks were my conſtant companions, and I was well received by the prieſt, who was a pleaſant man, and walked as ſtiff and upright as if a ſpit had been run through him. I went by times to take my place in a court the nuns windows looked into, it was comical to ſee the ſtrange poſtures of others, as mad pretenders as myſelf. One gazed without ever ſo much as winking; another ſtood with one hand on his ſword, and his beads on the other, like a ſtatue upon a tomb; another with his arms ſtretched out as if he were flying; ſome gaping, as if they would have had their hearts fly out at their mouths; ſome leaning againſt the walls, as if they had been to ſupport them; ſome walking as if to be bought for their pacing, like horſes; and others with *billet douxs* in their hands, like falconers, bringing the hawk to the lure. The jealous lovers were ſome laughing in rings, and looking up, others reading verſes and ſhowing them. All this was below where we were, but above the place for the nuns, was a little old tower, all full of cracks, chinks, and peeping holes, where appeared nothing but a confuſion, here a hand, there a foot, in another place a head, in another a handkerchief, a glove, or the like; ſome walked, others coughed, and ſo every one had her particular way. In ſummer it is pleaſant enough to ſee the men parch themſelves in the ſun, whilſt the women are little concerned at their ſufferings. In winter ſome of us ſtay ſo long in the wet till we are mouldy, and the moſs grows upon us; neither ſnow nor rain can drive us away; and all this is only to ſee a woman through a grate and a glaſs, like ſome holy relic, or curious piece of workmanſhip, for that is all we can ever expect. It is juſt like falling in love with a blackbird in a cage, if ever ſhe talks; or with a fine picture, if ſhe does not. The greateſt favour ever to be attained, is to touch the ends of the fingers. They lean their heads againſt the double grates, and ſhoot volleys of fine conceits through thoſe loopholes. This is perfect love at hide and ſeek, and yet for this we ſtudy to talk fine and whiſper, muſt endure every old woman that chides, every doorkeeper that commands, and every one at the wheel that gives what anſwer ſhe pleaſes.

I had followed this curſed employment ſo long, that I was well looked upon by the lady abbeſs, civilly treated by the good prieſt, and a familiar with the clerk, for we hide our folly from them, and this is all the happineſs ſuch madmen can aſpire to. I began to be weary of the doorkeeper's turning me away, and of the nuns begging, and conſidered how dear I endeavoured to purchaſe a place in hell, which others have at ſo eaſy a rate, and that I even anticipated to take ſhare of it in this world by ſuch extravagant means. It was plain that I rode poſt to perdition, and threw away my ſoul only for a few looks. When I talked to her, for fear of being overheard by the reſt, I uſed to thruſt my head ſo cloſe to the grate, that the print of it would not come out in two days, and at the ſame time ſpoke ſo low, that ſhe could not underſtand one word without a trumpet at her ear. Every body that ſaw me, cried, "A "curſe on thee, thou wicked nun-hunting dog;" beſides many other worſe compliments. All theſe things brought me to my ſenſes, and I reſolved to quit my nun, and to this purpoſe got off her the value of fifty crowns of her work, in ſilk ſtockings, rich purſes, and ſweatmeats, pretending to have them raffled for; but as ſoon as I had them in poſſeſſion, I ſet out for Seville, to try my fortune there, as the greater city. The reader may gueſs how much the nun was concerned, not for me, but what I cheated her of.

CHAP. X.

What happened to me at Seville, till I took Shipping for the Weſt Indies.

I HAD a good journey from Toledo to Seville, for I was ſharp at play, had loaded dice, both high and low, and could palm a dice, hold four, and throw out three; beſides, I had falſe cards, and knew how to pack any, and turn up what I pleaſed, and abundance of other fine arts and ſleights of hand, which I paſs by as tedious, and for fear they might rather ſerve to teach others evil practices, than for warnings of what they are to ſhun; but perhaps ſome few words of advice may be of uſe to ſuch as are not ſkilled in thoſe practices; and they who read my book, if they are cheated, may thank themſelves. Never think yourſelf ſafe becauſe you find the cards, for they will change them upon you whilſt a candle is ſnuffing. Take care they make no ſcratches or other impreſſions on the cards; and if my reader is a poor ſcoundrel, he muſt obſerve, that, among that gang of rake-hells, they prick the cards they would know with a pin, or fold them to leave a creaſe. If you happen to play among a better ſort of people, take heed of cards which are originally falſified, and have private marks on the paſteboard. Never truſt to a clean card, nor think yourſelf ſafe with a foul one, for the cheat is equal in both. Take heed the dealer never bows any cards more than others, which is a certain way to pick your pocket; and obſerve that no motions be made with the fingers, or no hints given by the firſt letters of words. I will not let you farther into this ſecret, this is enough to make you always ſtand upon your guard; for you may be aſſured I do not tell the hundredth part of the cheats.

Being maſter of theſe arts, I got to Seville, at my fellow traveller's expence, winning all the hire of the mules, my other charges, and money to boot, of them, and my landlords at the inns. I alighted at that they call the Moor's Inn, where I was found out by one of my ſchoolfellows at Alcala, whoſe name was Mata, but he thinking it did not make noiſe enough, had changed it to Matorral. He dealt in men's lives, and ſold cuts and ſlaſhes, which throve well with him; he carried the ſign of his trade on his face, where he had received his ſhare. He always made his bargain to a nicety for length and depth, when he was to beſtow any, and ſaid, "No man is ſo abſolute a maſter, as "he who has been well hacked and hewed him.

" himſelf:" And he was in the right, for his face was all over ſeams, and he was a downright drunken bully. He told me, I muſt go ſup with him and his comrades, and they would bring me back to the inn. I went with him, and when we were in his lodging, he ſaid, " Come, ſpark, lay by your cloak and look like " a man, for this night you ſhall ſee all the " brave fellows in Seville; and that they may " not look upon you as a cully, tumble your " band, thruſt out your back, and let your cloak " hang looſe, as if it were dropping off, for we " hate to ſee any man's cloak ſet faſt upon his " back. Wind about your chops, and make " faces with both ſides of your mouth, then talk " big, ſwear, and be very rude." I learned his leſſon, and he lent me a dagger, broad enough to have been a ſimitar, and for length it wanted nothing of a ſword but the name. " Now " drink off this quart of wine," ſaid he, " for " without you blunder, you will not look like a " true bully." We had gone ſo far in my inſtructions, and I was half ſeas over with what I had drank, when in came four of the gang, with four vizards inſtead of faces, bound about the middle like monkeys, with their cloaks inſtead of ropes, their hats ſtanding a tiptoe on their heads, and cocked up, as if the brims were nailed to the crowns; a whole ſmith's ſhop about their ſwords and daggers, and the points of them beating againſt their right heels. Their eyes ſtared, their whiſkers turned up, and their beards like bruſhes. They made their compliment with their mouths, and then, in a hoarſe tone, and clipping their words, ſaluted my companion, who returned in like manner. They ſat down, and ſpoke not one word to aſk who I was, but one of them looking at Matorral, and opening his mouth, thruſt out his under lip, by way of pointing at me. My introductor anſwered in the ſame language, laying hold of his beard, and looking down; after which they all got up, embraced, and expreſſed a great deal of kindneſs for me. I returned the ſame compliments, which were like ſmelling to ſo many hogſheads of wine. When it was ſupper-time, in came a parcel of ſtrapping ſcoundrels to wait at table, whom the topping bullies call underſpurleathers. We all ſat down together at table, and the firſt thing they ſerved up was a diſh of pickles, which as ſoon as they had taſted, they all fell to drinking to my honour, by way of welcome; and till I ſaw them drink to it, I muſt confeſs I never knew I had any. Next came fiſh and fleſh, all of it high ſeaſoned to promote drinking. There was a great bowl full of wine, like a half tub, on the ground, and he that was to pledge, lay all along to drink by wholeſale. I was taken with the contrivance, but by that time a few healths had gone about; we none of us knew one another. They fell to talk of warlike affairs, oaths flew as thick as hail, a matter of twenty or thirty perſons were cut out for deſtruction; amidſt their cups the mayor of the city was adjudged to be cut in pieces; then they reaped up the heroic actions of ſeveral famous cut-throats and murderers, and drank to the ſouls of ſome that were hanged. Some that were maudlin wept bitterly, calling to mind the untimely end of Alonzo Alvarez, one of their brethren, whoſe body was expoſed on a gibbet for the crows to feaſt on. By this time my companion's brains were turned topſy-turvy, and laying hold of a loaf, and looking earneſtly on the candle, he ſaid with a hoarſe voice, "By this, which is the face of God, and "by that light which came out of the angel's "mouth, if you think fit, gentlemen, we will "this very night maul the ſerjeant's man that "purſued our poor one-eyed friend." They all ſet up a diſmal cry, ratifying the propoſal made by an oath after this manner: They drew their daggers, laid their hands on the edge of the bowl, and lying along with their chops to it, ſaid, "As we drink this wine, ſo will we ſuck "the blood of every informing catchpole." "Who was this Alonzo Alvarez," ſaid I, "whoſe "death is ſo much regretted." "He was," anſwered one of them, "a brave fighting lad, "a man of ſpirit, full of mettle, and a good com-"panion. Let us go; for the devil begins to "be ſtrong in me." This ſaid, we all went out a catchpole-hunting. Being quite overcome with wine, and all my reaſon drowned, I never reflected on the danger I was running myſelf into. We came to the ſtrand, where we met the round, which no ſooner appeared, but our ſwords were drawn, and we attacked them. I did like the reſt, and at the firſt charge we made way for the filthy ſouls of two catchpoles to fly out of their bodies. The conſtable took to his heels, and ran up the ſtreet, crying out for help. We could not purſue, becauſe he had too much the ſtart, but took ſanctuary in the cathedral, where we were ſheltered againſt juſtice, and ſlept as much as was requiſite to diſcharge the fumes of the wine we had drank. When we came to our ſenſes, I could not but admire, that two catchpoles ſhould be killed by, and a conſtable fly from, a parcel of mere hogſheads of wine, for we were no better at that time. We fared well in our ſanctuary, for the termagant whores of the town flocked to, and ſpent all they had upon us. A ſtrapping jade, called Grajales, took a fancy to, and clothed me from head to foot after her own humour. I liked this ſort of living better than any I had yet tried, and therefore reſolved to ſtick to my truſty Grajales till death. I learnt all the cant, and in a ſhort time was an abſolute maſter among the ruffians. The officers of juſtice took all poſſible care to obſerve us, and kept rounds about the ſanctuary; yet for all that we took our rambles after midnight in diſguiſe. Perceiving this was like to be a tedious buſineſs, and that ill fate purſued me every where, though it made me never the wiſer to take warning for the future, yet it tired me out like a true obſtinate ſinner; and therefore, with the advice of my doxy Grajales, I reſolved to go to the Weſt Indies, taking her along with me to try whether I could meet with better fortune in another country; but it proved worſe, for they never mend their condition who only change places without mending their life and manners.

FORTUNE IN HER WITS,

AND THE

HOUR OF ALL MEN.

JOVE, in a ſplenotic rage rent his very throat, and pierced the earth with his bawling. He ſummoned all the gods in haſte to aſſemble before him in council. The firſt that appeared was Mars, that celeſtial Don Quixote, armed cap-a-pee, with his ſpear advanced, and making paſſes in the air. Next to him came the platter faced deity Bacchus, with a peruke made of vine branches, his eyes overflowing, his mouth like a wine preſs, belching out liquor at ſecond hand, his ſpeech ſtammering, his ſteps reeling, and his brain intoxicated with the juice of the grape. On the other ſide appeared hobbling Saturn, gorging himſelf with his own ſons. With him came dripping Neptune, the watery god, about him hung the ſea-weeds like rags, clung together with the ſpawn of fiſh, and with the water that ran from him, laying the duſt of the charcoal raiſed by his follower Pluto, a god of the devils, with his head and face powdered with ſoot, perfumed with brimſtone and gunpowder, and clothed in ſuch profound darkneſs, that he was ſcarce diſcernible, though cloſe followed by the glaring ſun, with his brazen face and tinſel beard. Venus, as ſhe came, filled the heavens with the vaſt circumference of her fardingale, hiding the five Zones under her petticoats, her face but half licked, and the tour that was to cover her bald ſkull hanging all awry. for haſte. After her came the Moon, with her face cut into quarters. Pan ruſhed in with a great noiſe, being followed by two vaſt herds of Sylvans, Fawns, and other hairy and cloven footed gods of the woods. All heaven ſwarmed with Manes, Lemures, and other little deities, who all took their chairs, the goddeſſes * ſquatting down like tailors upon their legs, the whole aſſembly attentively fixing their eyes upon Jove. Mars rattling his armour like the harmony of a tinker's kettle, ſtarted up, and looking ſtern as a bully after a beating, thundered out theſe words: "Open thy mouth with a vengeance, thou "mighty Hector of this upper region, open thy

---

* In Spain the women do not ſit on chairs, but on cuſhions upon the ground.

" mouth, I ſay, for you ſeem to be in a dream." Jove accoſted in ſo rough a dialect, whilſt, though it was ſummer, he held the ſparkling thunderbolt, when it had been much properer to have cooled himſelf with a fan, raiſing his voice, anſwered, " Keep your prating tongue betwixt " your teeth, and let us call Mercury." In the twinkling of an eye Mercury dropped before him, holding his little wand like a juggler, his heels fledged, and his little hat in the ſhape of a muſhroom on his head. Then Jove ſaid, " Thou " ubiquitary god, ſhoot thyſelf into the world, " and in a trice drag Fortune hither by the ears." In an inſtant the ſprite of Olympus, clapping wings inſtead of ſpurs to his heels, vaniſhed with ſuch ſwiftneſs, that the ſight could not diſtinguiſh between his departure and return. He came like Lazarillo leading blind Fortune, who, with a ſtaff in one hand, felt out her way, and in the other held a ſtring, which was a bridle to a little dog. She ſtood a tiptoe upon a globe, in the midſt of a wheel bound with threads, beads, ribbons, cords, and ropes, all which, as it moved, knit themſelves together, and unknit again. Behind, as her maid, came Opportunity, a broad-faced flat-noſed, bald-pated wench, only on the top of her forehead was one ſingle lock, ſcarce big enough to make one good

44792

whiſker. This lock was as ſlippery as an eel, and played in the air, being moved at the breath of every word. By her hands it appeared that Opportunity lived upon hard labour, and doing all the drudgery of Fortune. All the gods appeared diſguſted at the ſight of Fortune, and ſome of them made ſigns as if ſhe had turned their ſtomachs, when ſhe, in a ſqueaking tone, and ſpeaking at a venture, ſaid, “My eyes being in their ſwadling clouts, and my ſight in the dark, I cannot diſcover who you are that make up this aſſembly; but be you who you will, my diſcourſe is directed to you all, and particularly to thee, O Jove, who ſpitteſt thy thunderbolts after the drippings of the clouds; tell me what whimſey came into thy head to ſend for me, whereas for many ages paſt thou haſt never ſo much as thought on me. Perhaps thou and the reſt of thy mob of godlings have forgot how far the extent of my power is, and that I have toſſed about both thee and them, no leſs than I do poor mortals.” Jove ſwelling, and looking ſtern, replied, “Thou for thy extravagancies, thy follies, and thy wickedneſs are ſo great, that mortals believe, ſince we do not curb thee, there are no deities, that heaven lies waſte, and that I am a poor inſignificant god: They complain, that thou giveſt

" villanies thoſe rewards which are due to merit; " that virtue is unregarded and vice encouraged; " that thou placeſt thoſe in the judgment-ſeats, " who ought to be preferred to the gallows; that " thou beſtoweſt dignities on thoſe whoſe ears " ſhould be nailed to the pillory; and that thou " oppreſſeſt and impoveriſheſt thoſe thou oughteſt to raiſe and enrich." Fortune looking pale with anger, and chafing, ſaid, " I am no fool, " I know what I do, and all my actions are " guided by prudence: You who call me raſh " ſot, remember you cackled like a gooſe to " Leda, that you played the falſe coiner with " Danæ, that you bellowed, and acted the bull " with Europa, and have been guilty of a thouſand other roguiſh mad pranks, and that all " thoſe who attend you, have been only crows " and magpies; none of which fopperies can " be laid to my charge. If perſons of merit " are laid aſide, and virtuous men paſs unrewarded, the fault is not altogether mine; many " deſpiſe what I offer them, and their modeſty " is laid at my door as a crime: Others, rather " than ſtretch out their hands, let ſlip what I " tender them; others ſnatch it from me without my conſent, more men are enriched by " forcing it from me, than by my free gift. " There are more that ſteal what I refuſe, than

" that keep what I give them; many receive of " me, that they know not how to preſerve, they " loſe it, and pretend I take it from them; many " accuſe me for miſplacing gifts on others, which " would be much worſe employed on themſelves: There is no man happy without being " envied by many, and no man is miſerable without being contemned by all. This maid has " always ſerved me, without her I never have " done any thing; her name is Opportunity; " hear her, and learn of a drudging wench how " to judge of things." Then Opportunity letting her tongue run, for fear of letting herſelf ſlip, ſaid, " I am that ſort of good natured female, that offer myſelf to all men; many find, " but few enjoy me; I am a female Sampſoneſs, " for all my ſtrength lies in my hair; he that " can hold faſt by my lock, need not fear to be " thrown by my miſtreſs: It is I that manage, " I that diſtribute her, and when men know " not how to purſue their own intereſts, and " make their advantages, they lay all the blame " upon me: Folly and ignorance have furniſhed men with theſe helliſh ſentences: ' Who " would have believed it? I did not think. I " did not reflect on it. I did not know. It is " well enough yet. What matter is it. It is " neither here nor there. To-morrow will do, "There is time enough. I ſhall not want. God "will provide. All days are not alike. If one "thing fails, another hits, &c.' Theſe follies "make men conceited, ſlothful, and careleſs; "theſe are the gaps that I ſlip out at; theſe are "the rubs that overſet my miſtreſs's wheel; and "theſe the guſts that ſplit her ſail. Then if the "fools let me ſlip by them, what fault is it in "me to be gone? If they lay the rubs in the "way of my miſtreſs's wheel, why do they com- "plain of its jolting? If they know it is a wheel, "whereof every part is ſometimes up and ſome- "times down, and that each part deſcends in "order to riſe, and riſes in order to fall again, "why do they entangle themſelves in it? The "ſun has ſtood ſtill, the wheel of Fortune never "did. Whoſoever has thought to fix it, only "gave it a check, that it might whirl again with "the greater fury. Its motion, like that of time, "puts a period to all worldly felicities and cala- "mities, to all the lives in the world, and by "degrees to the world itſelf. This, O Jove, is "matter of fact, let who will gainſay it."

Fortune encouraged at theſe words, and turning on all hands like a weathercock, ſaid, "Op- "portunity has diſcovered how unjuſtly I am "accuſed; however, I am reſolved myſelf to "convince thee, thou ſupreme thunderer, and all thy company, carouſing in nectar and ambroſia, notwithſtanding that I always had, now have, and ſhall ever continue to have, as much power over you, as over the meaneſt rabble in the world. I hope to ſee your divinities ſtarving with hunger and cold for want of victims, and that not ſo much as a black pudding ſhall be ſacrificed to you, but you ſhall only ſerve to fill up ballads, and be brought in for rhyme ſake in love ſongs, for the diverſion of the mob, and the encouragement of hawkers.”

“A curſe light on all thy deſigns,” quoth the Sun, “for ſo impudently blaſpheming againſt our power. Were it permitted me, as I am the Sun, I would ſwelter thee with heat, ſcorch thee with my rays, and make thee run mad with the headach.” “Go dry up the dirt,” ſaid Fortune, “ripen cucumbers, furniſh plagues for the good phyſicians, and aſſiſt thoſe that louſe themſelves at thy light; remember your ſon was burnt to death like a heretic, therefore be ſilent hereafter, and let thoſe ſpeak to whom it belongs.” Then Jove, with all his gravity, uttered theſe words: “Fortune, both you, and that impudent wench thy ſervant are much in the right in many things you have ſaid; however, for the general ſatisfaction of all peo-

"ple, it is irrecoverably decreed, that on the "ſame day and hour throughout the whole world, "every man be put into thoſe circumſtances he "juſtly deſerves. This muſt be, therefore ap- "point the day and the hour." Fortune replied, "To what purpoſe is it to delay what muſt be, "let it be to-day, let us know what time of the "day it is." The Sun, who is the ſtandard of all clockmakers, anſwered, "This is the 20th "of June, as to the time of the day, it is three "quarters and ſix minutes after twelve." "Mind "then," quoth Fortune, "and as ſoon as it ſtrikes "four, you ſhall ſee how affairs go upon earth." Then falling to work, ſhe began to greaſe the axletree of her wheel, to ſettle the ſpokes, remove the nails, and entangle ſeveral cords, ſlackening ſome, and ſtraining others, till the Sun cried out, and ſaid, "It is juſt four, neither over "nor under, for this very inſtant I have brought "the ſhade of the gnomons of all clocks upon "the fourth poſtmeridian line." No ſooner had he uttered theſe words, than Fortune, as if ſhe had been playing on a cymbal, began to unwind her wheel, which whirling about like a hurricane, huddled all the world into an unparalleled confuſion. Fortune gave a mighty ſqueak, ſaying, "Fly wheel, and the devil drive "thee."

That very moment, a phyſician riding along on his mule, a ſnail's gallop in purſuit of diſeaſes, was ſurpriſed by the wonderful influence of that hour, which was to give all men their due, and on a ſudden he found himſelf in the poſture of a hangman, with his legs acroſs the ſhoulders of his patient, crying, Credo inſtead of Recipe, as if he had been going to turn him off the ladder.

At a ſmall diſtance followed, in the ſame ſtreet, a criminal that was whipped, the crier before proclaiming his miſdemeanors, the hangman behind laſhing him, he riding upon an aſs, and naked from the waiſt upward like a galley ſlave. This was his poſture at the ſtriking of the clock, which was no ſooner over, but the horſe the * alguazil rid on, threw him, and the aſs the criminal; the horſe took up the criminal, and the aſs the alguazil; and thus having changed ſtations, he began to be laſhed who before attended the execution, and he to attend who before was laſhed. The † ſcribe alighted to ſet all again to rights, and taking out his pen, it grew

---

* Alguazil is an officer in Spain that apprehends criminals, and attends the execution of juſtice. Criminals in Spain are carried to the gallows, and whipped upon an aſs.

† The ſcribe, in Spaniſh, eſcrivano, is a ſort of clerk, almoſt inſeparable from the alguazil.

out into a galley-oar, and inſtead of writing, he began to row.

The ſcavengers carts paſſing through another ſtreet at the firſt moment of the hour, ſtopped before an apothecary's ſhop, and on a ſudden all the dirt began to fly out of the cart into the ſhop, whence the pots and glaſſes leaped out into the carts with wonderful noiſe and confuſion. But the dirt and the pots meeting, as the one went in and other out, it was obſerved, that the dirt very ſqueamiſhly cried out, " Keep off." Meanwhile the duſtmen were not idle, but with their brooms and ſhovels ſwept together and threw up into the carts heaps of painted whores, pocky beaux, and powdered fops.

A certain notorious knave had built a ſumptuous houſe, not much inferior to a palace, with a ſtately porch, and over it a noble coat of arms cut in ſtone, and an inſcription as if he had been of ſome conſiderable family. The owner was an errant thief, who, under the ſhadow of his employ, had ſtole the whole coſt of the fabric. He was then in the houſe, and at the door was a bill ſignifying three apartments were there to be let. The hour came, O good God, who can expreſs ſuch a prodigy? Every ſtone, every brick in the whole ſtructure, fell aſunder, the tiles flew, ſome to the top of one houſe, and ſome to another, the rafters, doors and windows hurried into ſeveral houſes, to the terror of the owners, who looked upon this reſtitution as the effects of an earthquake, and thought it was the end of the world. The iron bars and grates walked about the ſtreets ſeeking whom they belonged to. The arms that ſtood over the doors poſted away to a country gentleman's ſeat, whence this curſed villain pretended himſelf to be deſcended. The rogue himſelf ſtripped of his fabric, was left alone at the corner of a ſtreet, with only the bill upon him which had been at the door, but ſo changed, that whereas before the purport of it was, "This houſe is to be let "unfurniſhed, inquire within of the landlord:" Now it was, "This thief is to be let unfurniſh-"ed, whoſoever will hire him, may come in "without knocking, ſince the houſe does not "hinder it."

Oppoſite to this man lived a pawnbroker, who ſeeing his neighbour's houſe vaniſh, thought to ſecure himſelf, ſaying, "The houſes remove "from their landlords, this is a baſe invention." But though he uſed the utmoſt diligence to ſecure himſelf, the hour was come, and on a ſudden an eſcritoir, a ſilver table, and a rich hanging which he kept in captivity, being pawned to him, flew from the walls with ſuch violence, that a piece of the hangings in its way to the window, wound itſelf about him, and carried him through the air above an hundred paces, where he dropped on the top of a houſe, not without ſome bruiſes. From thence, to his unſpeakable grief, he ſaw all he had hurried away to the right owners. After all the reſt came out the letters of * nobility, upon which he had lent a ſum of money to the gentlemen they belonged to, for two months, on condition to receive five-and-twenty per cent. intereſt for that ſhort time. Theſe letters, to his aſtoniſhment, as they paſſed by him, ſaid, "Thou barbarous "tyrant over pawns, if our maſter, for our ſake, "cannot be arreſted for debt, what reaſon can "you ſhow, to keep us in priſon?" This ſaid, they leaped into a cook's ſhop, where the gentleman that owned them ſat with a hungry belly, envying every bit he ſaw another put into his mouth.

An eternal talker, who laviſhed as many words, as would have furniſhed half a ſcore intolerable babblers, and whoſe tongue ſeemed to be the perpetual motion ſo long ſought after, was buſy in confounding his whole neighbourhood with the overflowing of his clack; when,

---

* In Spain gentlemen take out their letters of nobility, which, whoſoever can ſhow, is free from arreſts.

on a ſudden, the hour being come, his tongue was tied up, and he ſtruggling to run on, only ſtuttered and ſtammered the ſame ſyllables over, without end; and finding his mouth ſtopped, his very eyes and ears ſeemed to forget their own office, and burſt out into talk.

Five judges were ſitting on the bench upon a trial; one of them, merely out of ill nature, was projecting how he might caſt both parties. Another being a downright *Ignoramus*, and underſtanding nothing of the matter, was reſolved to give his opinion, as all blockheads do, at a venture. The third, a doating old fellow, who had ſlept moſt part of the trial, giving judgment, like Pilate's wife, by dreams, was conſidering with which of his fellows he ſhould cloſe in opinion at random. The fourth, who was a learned and upright judge, ſat like a cypher next to the laſt, who being corrupted with bribes, ſtrained the ſenſe of the law, and drew over to his party the other three; but at the very inſtant of giving judgment the hour commenced, and inſtead of ſaying, "The court is of opinion that "ſuch a one is caſt and condemned," he ſaid, "The court does award that we be damned, "and accordingly we are damned." "Be this "ſentence fulfilled," ſaid an unknown voice. In a moment their gowns were converted into ſnake-ſkins, and they falling together by the ears, ſoon ſtripped one anothers faces, every one carrying away his neighbour's beard, to ſhow that their judgment lay in their fingers and not in their heads.

A matchmaker was buſy intoxicating an honeſt man's brain, who being weary of a quiet life and a good eſtate, was thinking to marry. He propoſed to him a conſummate jilt, and ſet her off in this manner: "Sir, I will not com-"mend her birth, becauſe, God be praiſed, you "have quality enough to beſtow on her; as for "riches, you are plentifully provided; beauty "in a wife is a thing of dangerous conſequence; "as for matter of judgment, it is you that are "to govern her, and you do not take her for a "counſellor; ill humours ſhe is not troubled "with; her years are but few (yet he meant "ſhe had but few to live); ſhe has all the other "good qualities you could wiſh." The poor man in a paſſion cried out, "Thou accurſed "devil, what other good qualities can ſhe have, "ſince you own ſhe is neither well born, rich, "beautiful, nor diſcreet; and all you can ſay "for her is, that ſhe is not ill natured." Scarce had he done when the hour began, and the curſed matchmaker, who acts the tailor at weddings, ſtealing, lying, cheating, patching, and piecing, found himſelf married to the monſter he would have vamped upon the other man; and the new couple falling upon one another, went off kicking and ſcratching, and crying by turns, "Who are you? What fortune did you "bring? You are not worthy to wipe my "ſhoes."

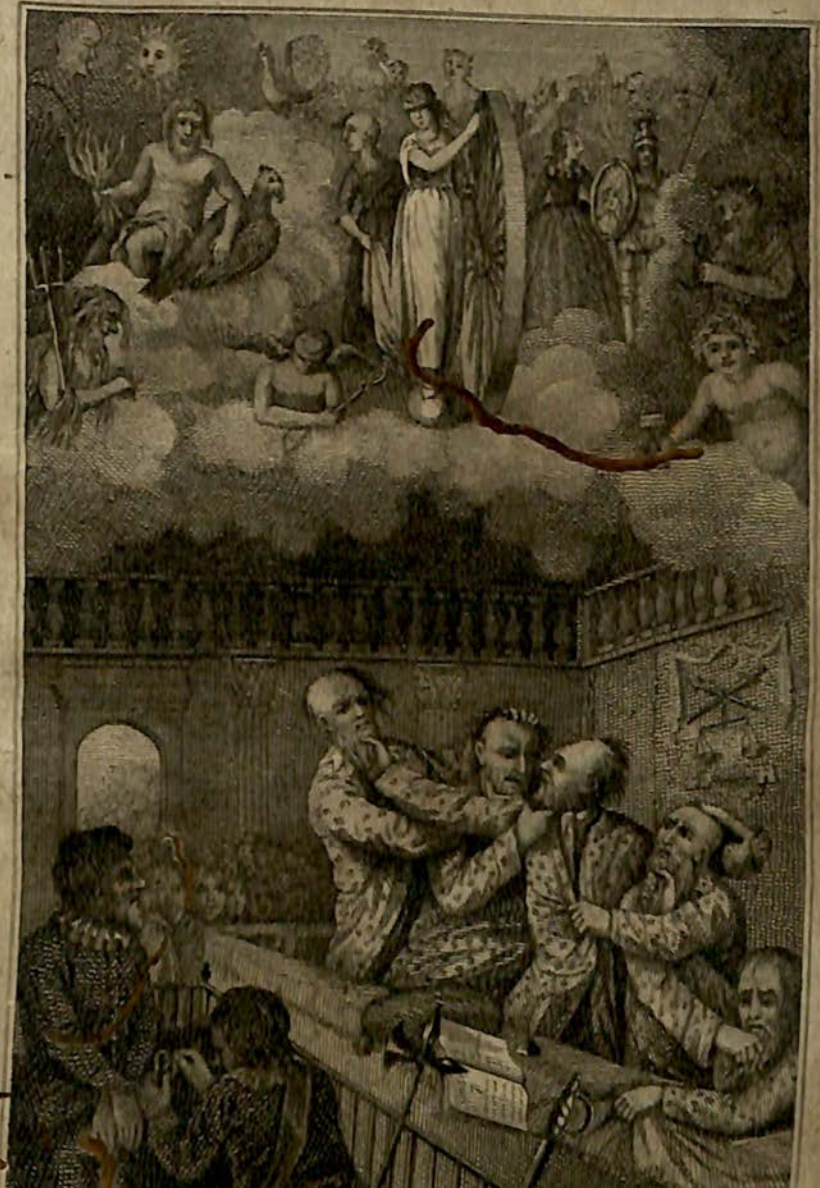
A poet having ſeated himſelf among an aſſembly of wits, was reading to them a pedantic obſcure poem of his own compoſing, ſo ſtuffed with Latinisms, ſo cramped with ſyncopes, ſo entangled with parentheſis, and ſo perplexed with ſimiles and alluſions, that none of the company could find either head or tail to it. Upon the turn of the hour he had gone half way through his jargon, or confuſion of languages, and all the hearers preſſing upon him to pick out, if poſſible, ſome meaning from that chaos of hard words, one of them who held a candle in his hand to inform himſelf the better by overlooking the paper, put it ſo cloſe that the unfortunate poem took fire. The poet ſtamped and tore his hair, ſeeing all his labour condemned to the flames; but he that had fired it pacified him, ſaying, "Theſe verſes are like "old tarniſhed ſilver lace, they muſt be firſt "burnt, and then perhaps you may ſeparate the "pure metal from the droſs."

A topping whore ſailing out of her lodging with a mighty fardingale, ſo large ſhe could ſcarce crowd through her narrow entry, and filling both ſides of the ſtreet with the vaſt compaſs of her coats, was overtaken by the firſt minute of the all-ruling hour, and on a ſudden being ſet upon her head, appeared like a bell inverted. Here was diſcovered a vaſt fardel of rags that compoſed a rump-roll, with a piece of tapeſtry-hanging rolled up to ſet out her hips, which in the turn looſening, and falling over her belly, there appeared at the bottom of it an Holofernes's head. The whole ſtreet was alarmed with the ſhouts of the rabble that beheld her. She ſhricked, but her voice being drowned in the labyrinth of her petticoats fallen about her head, the noiſe ſounded as if it came out from a deep cavern. She had certainly been ſtifled in the crowd, but that at the ſame time a beau ſtrutting along the ſtreet with falſe calves, and three falſe teeth; and two dotards with their gray hair, and beards coloured black; and three old bald-pated fellows that wore periwigs; were all ſurpriſed by the influence of that hour. The beau feeling his calves ſink away, thought to cry for help, believing his legs would be ſtolen; but at the firſt motion of his tongue, out drops his teeth. The dotards beards and hair became as gray as a badger, ſo that they ſcarce knew one another; and the bald fellows periwigs flew away with their hats, leaving them nothing but the whiſkers.

A certain nobleman had a favourite domeſtic who devoured his ſubſtance; this domeſtic was cheated by his ſervant, the ſervant by his man, the man by his friend, the friend by his wench, and the wench was deluded by the devil. Now the hour being come, the devil, who ſeemed to be at ſuch a diſtance from the lord, ſeizes upon the whore, the whore on her ſpark, the ſpark on the man, the man on the ſervant, the ſervant on his maſter, and the maſter on his lord, and the devil poſſeſſing him, in a helliſh rage he falls upon his domeſtic, the domeſtic on his ſervant, the ſervant on his man, the man on his friend, the friend on his whore, and ſhe laid about them all; and thus exaggerated by furies, they tore one another to pieces. All their frauds and villanies were laid open, and the devil, who had managed the whole contrivance without diſcovery, ſwept them away all in a cluſter.

A rich married woman ſat at her dreſſing-table, plaſtering up her wrinkled freckly ſkin, ſleeking her weather-beaten forehead, drawing eyebrows with a pencil, colouring her decayed cheeks with Spaniſh wool, and dyeing her pale lips of a lively cherry colour. By her, as an aſſiſtant, kneeled a decrepid old governante like a ſkeleton, dreſſed up, holding a tour of an extraordinary magnitude. Next to her ſtood a young chambermaid, yet a novice at the trade of daubing; and in her hands a pair of iron bolſtered bodice, contrived to rectify two mighty excreſcences that diſcompoſed the figure of the body. In this poſture ſat the lady confounding and ſhaming her very looking-glaſs, when the hour commenced, and ſhe, led by the powerful influence thereof, began to lay about her, applying the white-waſh to her hair, the black lead to her teeth, the red to her eyebrows and forehead, clapping the tower on her jaws, and lacing on the bolſtered bodice the wrong way. Thus in a moment ſhe was converted into a ſcarecrow, with a curled beard, and four hunches more ghaſtly and frightful than a hobgoblin. The governante thinking ſhe was diſtracted, ſtarted up, and fled with might and main; the chambermaid ſwooned away, as if ſhe had ſeen the devil; and the lady enraged in that horrible poſture ſcoured after the governante. The noiſe brought the huſband, who ſeeing his wife, thought ſhe was poſſeſſed by ſome malignant ſpirit, and ran with ſpeed to call a prieſt to apply exorciſms to her.

A ſovereign prince reſolved to be preſent himſelf at a gaol delivery, being informed that his officers made the priſon their market, where they bought and ſold crimes and criminals at all ſorts of rates and prices, exchanging robbers for gold, and murderers for ready money. He ordered the priſoners to be brought before him, and found they had been apprehended for the crimes they had committed, but were detained through the avarice of their keepers, who computed what ſome had and might have ſtolen, and what others had or might have of their own; ſo that their cauſe was depending as long as their ſtock laſted, and the day it expired was the day they were puniſhed; it being plain they were apprehended for the ill they had done, and executed for what they had not. Amongſt the reſt were two condemned to be hanged the next day. One of theſe having compounded with his adverſary, was kept as a priſoner at large. The other they deſigned to hang for robbing, after having been three years a priſoner, during which time they had devoured all he ſtole, and all he was worth. Thus far had this prince proceeded when the hour commenced,



Drawn by A. [illegible] Vide Fortune in her Wits, P. 118 Eng by R. [illegible]

And they falling together by the ears ſoon
ſtripped one anothers faces.

and he turning pale with anger, ſaid, " This " man you deſigned to diſcharge, becauſe he " has compounded with his adverſary, ſhall be " hanged to-morrow; for the contrary would " be expoſing lives to ſale, and the price of buy- " ing off an appeal would prove the purchaſe " of blood; ſo that pardons for murder being to " be bought, a rate would be ſet upon every " man's life, and thus all examples of juſtice " would ceaſe, it being an eaſy matter to per- " ſuade the appellant that a thouſand or five " hundred crowns will do him more good than " the hanging of his enemy. There are two " parties concerned in all public offences, *viz.* " juſtice, and the perſon offended; and it is no " leſs neceſſary that the former ſhould puniſh, " than that the latter ſhould forgive. This " thief, whom after three years impriſonment " you intended to hang, ſhall be diſcharged; " for as it had been juſtice to have hanged him " three years ago, ſo now it would be a barba- " rous wrong, becauſe in him you would hang " his father, wife, and children, who are inno- " cent, and whoſe ſubſtance, by theſe delays, you have devoured. I remember a ſtory of " a man who, curaged that the mice gnawed " his papers, cruſts of bread, parings of cheeſe, " and old ſhoes, took in cats to deſtroy the

" mice; but perceiving the cats not only eat " the mice, but ſtole his meat out of the pot, " and tore it off the ſpit, that one day they " ſpoiled a fowl, and another a whole joint of " meat, he killed the cats, and ſaid, 'The mice " for my money.' Do you apply the moral of " this fable, ſince you, like devouring cats, in- " ſtead of cleanſing the ſtate from vermine, do " catch and eat the thieves, who are little mice, " that pick a pocket, cut a purſe, ſnatch a hat, " or ſteal a cloak; and at the ſame time you " waſte the country, conſume eſtates, and de- " ſtroy whole families." This ſaid, he ordered all the priſoners to be diſcharged, and the officers to be apprehended. There was a wonderful noiſe and confuſion, thoſe lamented who before were inexorable; and the priſoners loaded thoſe with fetters and chains, who before had fettered them.

Several women appeared in the ſtreet, ſome of them afoot; and though many were well ſtricken in years, they tripped it along like young girls, proud of their little feet and white petticoats. Others dreſſed like Bartholomew babies, and ſet up on glaſs cupboards, or ſedans, carried by greaſy fellows, the fartheſt proſpect of the ladies eyes, being the neighbouring haunches of the foremoſt, and the next perfume of their noſes, proceeded from his ſweaty feet, which being free from ſocks, ſent a moſt fragrant ſmell: As gay as young girls, ſtriving to be taken for ſuch, concealing their age as they would their ſhame, and ogling with thoſe eyes that were ready to ſink into their heads. Upon the very entrance of the hour, they were met by a pack of ancient aſtrologers, with their ephemerides in their hands, who preſently attacked them, to ſix upon every one the date of her life, to the very year, day, hour, minute, and ſecond, of their nativity. Theſe conjurers ſet up a cry, "Own your age, ye wretches, ſince it "is your doom, you are forty-two years old, "two months, ſive days, two hours, nine mi-"nutes, and twenty ſeconds," ſays one of the aſtrologers to one of the ladies. Good God! who can expreſs the terrible ſhrieks ſhe raiſed; all that could be underſtood was, "You lie, "'tis falſe, I am not ſifteen; Lord, what a rogue "is this to ſay ſuch a thing." Another cried, "I am not eighteen;" a third, "I am but thir-"teen;" "I am a mere child, an infant," cries another. The aſtrologer was writing her age upon the back of one, as if it had been a bill upon a door; and it was to this effect: "This "woman was born into the world in the year "1629." She perceiving by this means it

would appear ſhe was ſixty-ſeven years of age, all in a rage cried out, "Thou old doating em-
"blem of death, I am but juſt come into the
"world, my teeth are not all cut." "Thou de-
"cayed piece of antiquity," replied he, "teeth
"will never ſpring under old ſtumps; look up-
"on your date." "I'll own no date;" quoth ſhe, and thus falling together by the ears, the controverſy ended in a wonderful confuſion.

After a ſumptuous dinner, a mighty potentate ſat lulling his pride with the falſe flatteries of his ſervants. A grumbling noiſe reſounded from his crammed guts, which could not agree in the cooks-ſhop of his belly, with the ſtrange medley of varieties he had devoured. He foamed at the mouth, the wine boiling over, and his whole face was inflamed and bloated with the exhalation of his ſtomach. At each word he uttered, though never ſo ſtupid, the ſtanders by, like men in a frenzy, poured out ſuperlative encomiums. An admirable ſentence, cried one; nothing could be expreſſed finer, ſays another; moſt incomparable words, ſays a third; and, laſtly, a paraſite, who laboured to out-flatter all the reſt, ſtraining a lie to the utmoſt pitch, exclaims, Learning itſelf ſtands amazed to hear you, and even admiration is outdone. The great man ſtrutting, and fetching up two or three gulps, the forerunners of a vomit, driveled out theſe words: "I am much concerned "for the loſs of my two ſhips." Immediately the paraſites renewed their flatteries, and romancing without meaſure, one of them replied, That that loſs redounded to his honour; that it fell out as could have been wiſhed; and nothing could have happened more opportunely, ſince it adminiſtered an opportunity of falling out with his neighbours, from whom he might take two hundred in lieu of thoſe two, which might eaſily be compaſſed. To prove this, the falſe flatterer produced many examples. Another ſaid, That loſs was the greateſt teſtimony of his grandeur, for only he was a great prince who had much to loſe; that loſing was a better demonſtration of power than gaining and acquiring, which were the practice of pirates and robbers: That damage ſuſtained, he added, would be the enriching of him, and then began to fill his ears with ſentences out of Tacitus, Salluſt, Polybius, Thucydides, and other authors, repreſenting the vaſt loſſes of the Greeks and Romans, and a thouſand other extravagancies. The mighty glutton, who only ſtudied how to excuſe his ſloth, took theſe falſehoods as full ſatisfaction for his loſs. The devil himſelf could not have contrived a better way to infatuate him. At this time the crudity of his ſtomach, for want of digeſtion, caſt up a belch, which made the room to echo. No ſooner had the curſed paraſites heard it, than kneeling down to make him believe he had ſneezed, they unanimouſly ſaid, "God bleſs you." That very minute began the hour, and the great man raving as if exaggerated by furies, cried out, "Villains, 'ſince you would impoſe upon me ſo far as to "make a belch paſs for a ſneeze, though my "mouth and my noſe are ſo cloſe together, "what can I expect you would do in thoſe "things I neither ſee nor ſmell." Then ſhaking his hands about his ears, as if he were driving away their lies, he ran to them, and kicked them out of the palace, ſaying, "Had thoſe "fellows come upon me when I had a cold, "they had utterly undone me; one 'ſenſe that "was left me proved their ruin, there is no "greater happineſs than ſmelling."

The miſers, warned by coſtly experience, ſeparate themſelves from the cheats, and theſe, rather than loſe their trade, attacked one another, diſguiſing their words, and counterfeiting plain dealing. Says one cheat to another, "Sir, "having paid dear for dealing with ſharpers, "who have been my ruin, I come to you who "are no ſtranger to my honeſty, to deſire you

" will lend me 3000 royals in * braſs, upon a " bill which is accepted and payable in ſilver " within two months; the party the bill is " drawn upon is ſo reſponſible, the money is as " good as if you had it in your pocket, and you " will have no further trouble than telling of " it." But the man on whom he gave the bill was the very link of fraud and deceit. The ſharper, who heard the other ſharper commending the third, pretended not to be acquainted with the qualifications of either, and arming himſelf with his own weapons, with a doleful deliberation, anſwered, That he was juſt then come abroad to borrow 4000 royals upon a pawn that was worth eight. They all accoſted one another with gilt chains that were to paſs for gold, counterfeit bills that were accepted, ſham ſecurities, falſe notes, plate they borrowed for a feaſt, and bits of glaſs and Briſtol ſtones under the title of diamonds. It was wonderful to hear the diſcourſe that paſſed betwixt them. One ſaid, "Honeſty is the beſt policy, and plain-" dealing is a jewel. I had rather die in a ditch " than do a baſe thing. I ſtand upon my re-" putation; it is a great bleſſing not to be

---

* There are ſuch quantities of copper-money in Spain, that great ſums are often paid in it, and great conſideration is alowed for payments in gold or ſilver.

"afraid to ſhow one's face; this has been my "education from my cradle." Another of the cheats anſwered, "There is nothing like keep-"ing touch; an honeſt man's word is as good "as his bond; I never deſired ill-gotten riches; "I will have nothing that may require reſtitu-"tion; my ſoul is more precious to me than "all the world; I would not be guilty of one "cheat for all the riches in the earth; I value 'my conſcience above all the univerſe con-"tains." Thus were theſe diſſemblers diſguiſing their ſly deſigns with fair ſpeeches, when the hour came upon them; and every ſharper believing his companion, they all ruined one another. He that had the the falſe chain gave it for the counterfeit bill; he that ſhowed the glaſs diamonds exchanged them for the borrowed plate. The one ran to the goldſmith, the other with his bill to the banker, to compound for half in ready money, before the cheat of the chain was diſcovered. The banker told him the bill was not his, neither did he know any ſuch man, and ſent him away with a flea in his ear. Away ſlunk the ſharper with his bill inſtead of his tail betwixt his legs, ſaying, "O dog, what a trick had he ſerved me, "but that the chain was made of old iron." He that parted with the falſe diamonds for the plate, being at the goldſmith's, ſelling it for leſs than the weight, rejoiced to think how he had bubbled the other with bits of glaſs. In comes the right owner, and ſeeing his plate ſwing in the ſcale, calls an alguazil, and ſeizes the cheat for a thief, and they fell together by the ears. At the noiſe out runs he with the falſe diamonds: He that was ſelling the plate, cried out, "That rogue ſold it to me." The other anſwered, "He lies, he ſtole it from me." The goldſmith cried, "That ſcoundrel would have "ſold me pebbles for diamonds." The owner of the plate was for ſeizing them both; the ſcribe was for ſecuring them all three till the matter was decided. The alguazil ſeized the two cheats, and the ſcribe led the owner of the plate by the cloak. After the rogues had well buffetted one another, and thus well attended by the mob, they were led to gaol, and there put into cuſtody of the hangman's maſter of the wardrobe.

There is a ſmall iſland on the coaſt of Denmark, in which there are five towns. The lord of this place was very poor, rather becauſe he coveted much, than that he wanted for any thing. God had afflicted the inhabitants with a general inclination in them all to be projectors, ſo that the land ſeemed to be infeſted with as many monſters as there were men. All the neighbouring people ſhunned theſe iſlanders as they would the plague, for the very air that came from them was ſo contagious, it conſumed their flocks, blaſted their fields, waſted their treaſure, and ruined their trade. So prodigious was the natural proneneſs to projecting in that country, that the very ſucking babes, inſtead of daddy and mammy, cried out nothing but Project. The whole iſland was a confuſed chaos, for man and wife, father and ſon, neighbour and neighbour, were ever jangling and bawling about their projects; and they were as intoxicated with them, as if they had been drunk with wine. The lord of this place (avarice, which is one of the worſt devils that diſtracts the world, having gained the aſcendant over him) ordered a general gathering of projects. Legions of projectors aſſembled before his palace, with ſcrips and ſcrolls of paper ſtuck in their girdles, and run through their button-holes, and peeping out of their pockets. The lord having made known his wants, demanded their aſſiſtance, and they all at once laying hold of their papers, and crowding till they had almoſt ſtifled one another, in an inſtant heaped up four tables with their memoirs. The hurry being ſomewhat over, he began to look over them. The firſt paper he opened was entitled to this effect, "A project for getting an infinite "quantity of ſilver and gold, without aſking it, "or taking it from any body." A difficult propoſition in my mind, ſays the lord. The ſecond, "How to gather unmeaſurable treaſure "by taking it from all men, and enriching them "by taking it away." The firſt, quoth the lord, of taking from all men, I like; but as to the ſecond, which is to enrich them by taking it from them, I am dubious, yet let them look to that. The third, "An eaſy, pleaſing, and "juſt project for amaſſing of many millions, in "ſuch manner, that they who are to pay them "ſhall not miſs them, but rather think they are "beſtowed on them." This I approve of, leaving the perſuaſive part to the projector. The fourth project undertakes to make what is deficient to ſuperabound, without adding any thing, or taking away, and without giving any body cauſe of complaint. A project ſo inoffenſive can have nothing of truth in it. The fifth, which offers to furniſh all that ſhall be deſired, directs to take by fair and foul means, and to aſk of all men, and they will give themſelves to the devil. This project, having to do with the devil, ſeemed practicable. The author encouraged by this approbation, added, "And I pro-

" poſe, that thoſe who levy it, ſhall be a com-
" fort to them who ſuffer by it." The devil put it into his head to let ſlip that word, furies poſſeſs the projectors, who thunder out reproaches againſt him, calling him ſot and dog, and crying, " Thou ſcoundrel, hell itſelf could ne-
" ver have propoſed a comfort in tax-gatherers,
" they themſelves being the greateſt of grievan-
" ces." They called one another ſons of projectors, as it had been ſons of whores, condemning one another's propoſals, and each approving only of his own. In the height of this fray, many of the lord's ſervants came running, and crying, the palace was on fire in three ſeveral places, and the wind blew high. Juſt then began the hour, the ſmoke was great, and the flame aſcended. The lord, in that conſternation, knew not which way to turn himſelf. The projectors bid him ſit ſtill, and they would ſet all to rights in a moment; and ruſhing out from his preſence, ſome laid hands on all they found in the houſe, caſting the cabinets, tables, glaſſes, and all that was of value, out at the windows; others with ſledges overthrew a tower; others ſaying, the fire would ceaſe as ſoon as it had vent, uncovered a great part of the houſe, breaking down the roofs, and deſtroying all that ſtood in their way. None of them went about

to quench the fire, but all were employed in pulling down the houſe, and confounding all that was in it. The lord ſeeing the ſmoke decreaſe, went out, and found that the common people, with his officers and ſervants, had overcome the fire, yet at the ſame time perceiving that the projectors were tearing up the very foundations, had demoliſhed his palace, and ſpoiled all his furniture. Incenſed and raging at this hideous ſight, he cried out, "Dogs, you "are worſe than the fire, and ſuch are all your "projects; it were better I had been burnt "than to have given ear to you, ſo deſtructive "are all the remedies you apply. You over"turn a whole houſe, for fear a corner of it "ſhould fall, and throw the beſt goods into "the ſtreet, pretending to ſave them. You "feed a prince with his own limbs, and pretend "to maintain him, when at the ſame time he is "devouring himſelf. Villains, juſtly did the "fire come to burn me, for gathering and ſuf"fering you to live; but when it perceived me "in the power of projectors it ceaſed, conclu"ding I was already conſumed. Fire is the "moſt merciful of projectors, for water quenches "it, but you increaſe in ſpite of all the elements. "Antichriſt will be a projector, and ſhall burn "you all alive, and keep your aſhes to make

" ley, to waſh out the ſtains of all common-
" wealths."

The bawds and whores had gathered a wicked council, where they railed at the purſes they could not come at, and ſpoke ill of money that was out of their reach. The antienteſt of the bawds, mumbling her words betwixt her gums, with a hollow tone, proceeding from the want of teeth, grunted out theſe words to the aſſembly: " The world is now at the laſt gaſp; it is a
" ſtarving age; things are at the worſt; fairings
" and new-years gifts are long ſince out of date;
" love-offerings are ſcarce remembered; money
" is come to that paſs nobody knows it, and it
" is vaniſhed from our ſight; a crown piece is
" ſhown about as if it were an elephant, and
" piſtoles are ſtyled of bleſſed memory. Promiſes
" have ſucceeded in the place of ready coin.
" A compliment with, you may rely upon my
" word, is the common ſtop gap, and an empty
" note paſſes for current caſh. Your ſpruce
" beaux, with buſhy wigs and long ſword-knots,
" will reduce you to a morſel of bread. Our
" buſineſs is to have and to hold, to ſeize the
" ready rhino, and to be paid beforehand. I
" recommend to you certain men that are half
" rotten, that live in the ſpace betwixt dotage
" and the grave, that trim up a walking ſkele-

"ton, and lay up for no heir but their luxury, paying well for the weakneſs of their limbs. Intereſt takes away all ſqueamiſhneſs; ſhut your eyes, and ſtop your noſes, as if you were ſwallowing a purge; a bitter draught is ſometimes a wholeſome medicine. Make account that you burn old lace for the ſilver, or ſuck a bone to get out the marrow. I have half a dozen of dry old dotards, who ſpit pieces of eight for every one of you. I do not deſire the thirds, but ſhall be ſatisfied with ſome ſmall allowance to keep up that reputation I have preſerved all my life." She ſaid; and cloſing her chin with the tip of her noſe, made a face like a nut-cracker. One of the young harpies replied, "Thou antiquated contriver of delight, coupler of male and female, tacker of nations, joiner of giblets, and counterfeiter of faces, conſider we are too young to be ſold to impotent curmudgeons; make uſe of your rhetoric among the decayed governantes, who are but walking carcaſſes playing about the grave, as butterflies do about a candle, till they drop into it. Young blood is more inclined to the fleſh than to money, and prefers pleaſure before riches; therefore let me adviſe you to chooſe ſome other trade, for quality has now taken up that of bawding, and I

" hope to ſee rotten eggs thrown at their coach-
" es inſtead of the pillory." Scarce had the night-walker ſpoke the laſt word, when the hour began, and a whole ſhoal of creditors ruſhing in, fell upon them. The landlord ſeized the beds and hangings for houſe rent, the upholſterer their clothes for the hire of his goods, till both, with a hideous noiſe, fell foul of each other. At the ſame time a broker puts in for his clothes. The wenches ſhrieked, calling them rude unmannerly fellows, threatening what they would do, and ſwearing they would never put up ſuch an affront. The damned old bawd bleſſed herſelf with both hands, and roared as high as the loudeſt. In comes a bully to one of the jilts, and, without aſking queſtions, draws his ſword, and falls upon the creditors, calling them thieves and robbers. They drew, and in the fray overturned and broke all the goods in the room. The wenches ran to the windows, crying, " Help! Help! Murder! Murder!" At this ſummons up comes an alguazil with all his retinue, bidding them keep the king's peace. The broil grew hotteſt upon the ſtairs, till out they ruſhed into the ſtreet, ſome wounded, others with their clothes rent. The ruffian with a broken head, but without hat or cloak, took ſanctuary in a church. The alguazil entered

the houſe, and ſeeing the old woman, laid violent hands on her, ſaying, " Art thou here ſtill, " old Belzebub, after having been thrice ba- " niſhed? Thou art the ringleader of all this " miſchief." Then ſeizing her with the young fry, and ſecuring all they had, he drove them away half naked, with their hair about their ears, to gaol, all the rabble attending and ſhouting, " Away with the whores."

A counſellor at law, whoſe greateſt learning lay in his grizly beard, like Sampſon's ſtrength in his hair, ſat in a room better furniſhed with books than he was with conſcience. His whole ſtudy was how to embroil his clients, not to conſult his authors, and yet was ſo proud of his library, that being a mere ignoramus, it might truly be ſaid, he knew not the value of it. He had gained a great reputation by his roaring voice, his moving geſtures, and a wonderful fluency of tongue, wherewith he bore down all other lawyers. His chamber could ſcarce contain his clients, every one preſſing forward to lay his caſe open, and empty his purſe. All his anſwers were, " I am fully informed. I have " ſtudied the caſe. Your right is undeniable. " It agrees with the expreſs letter of the law. It " is as clear as the day. There is no difficulty " in this ſuit. It is a caſe adjudged. The law

" is directly on your ſide. It will eaſily be de-
" termined. The judges are for us. Your ad-
" verſary has nothing to ſay for himſelf. All
" that has been done is void in itſelf. That
" judgment muſt be reverſed. Be ruled by me."
Some he ordered to petition, others to appeal, others to demur, others to put in their interrogatories, others to bring their writ of error, and others to ſuborn freſh witneſſes. All that immenſe number of volumes was turned over, and nothing reſounded but an unintelligible confuſion of law gibberiſh. The counſellor demanded his fee, the ſolicitor his due, the attorney his reward, the clerk his perquiſites, and the ſcrivener his pay. Whilſt they were in this debate, the hour began, and the clients, unanimouſly, as if it had been one man, cried out, " Good Mr.
" Sergeant, in all ſuits the adverſary is the leaſt
" of evils, for he ſues at his own coſt, and you
" plead for us at our own; and you the ſolici-
" tor, the clerk, and the attorney, run away
" with our money. The adverſary waits for
" judgment, and purſues upon an appeal, but
" you and your adherents give a definitive ſen-
" tence in your own behalf. Our ſuit may go
" for and againſt us, but in the following of it
" we muſt of neceſſity be caſt four times a day;
" ſo that in the end we may obtain our right,

"but have loſt our money. All thoſe authors "cannot perſuade us, but it is a madneſs to "ſpend what we have, to get what another man "has, and perhaps be at laſt diſappointed. We "had rather have one adverſary than five; for "ſuppoſing the ſuit ſhould go on our ſide, it "will be when it has ruined us. Lawyers de-"fend their clients, as ſeamen do their ſhips in "a ſtorm, throwing over all they have, that, if "it be God's will, they may be brought into "their port empty. The beſt advice is to agree "amongſt ourſelves; for by agreeing we ſhall "ſave what you take from us. We are all go-"ing to compound with our adverſaries. Your "beſt revenues ariſe out of our obſtinacy, and if "we, by compounding, ſhould loſe all we ſued "for, at leaſt we ſhall gain all that you loſe. "We would adviſe you to put a bill upon your "door; for we think it better to ſpend our "money upon whores than lawyers; and for "your part, ſince your only buſineſs has been "to ſet men together by the ears, it will be your "beſt courſe to turn ſoldier or ſtateſmen."

The vintners, a perverſe generation, who raiſe the price of their wine, at the ſame rate that they brew water, ſelling the rain diſguiſed and diſcoloured with ſloes, and the dregs of their hogſheads, for the juice of the grape, were met in a tavern to the number of ſix or ſeven, with as many bullies and highwaymen, and a quorum of draggle-tailed jilts, newly whipped out of bridewell, who danced themſelves dry, and drank to dance again. The bumpers flew about like lightning, to the tune of three in a hand. "Delicate wine," quoth one of the ſparks, perceiving the cheat, and winking upon the knave that was to pledge him. The other, who feared it would breed frogs in his belly, rather than ſend fumes into his brain, replied, "This is "truly a rich wine, and we poor rogues; for "the waters belong to the rich and not to the "poor." The vintner hearing their flouts, called them ſots, bidding them drink and hold their peace, "Drink and ſwim, you ſhould have ſaid," replied one of the good fellows. This minute began the hour, and the whole company growing mutinous, threw the pots and glaſſes at the vintner, crying, "Inhuman water-ſeller, we are "more like drowned rats than drunkards, thou "makeſt us pay by the quart for the river water "thou bringeſt in by the hogſhead." The vintner having nothing to ſay for himſelf, cried, "Water! Water!" as if his houſe had been a fire, and rolling his hogſheads into the ſtreet, knocked out the heads of them, letting the liquor run down the channel.

A ſwarm of 32 candidates, all aiming at one employment, were waiting to ſpeak with the nobleman in whoſe gift it was. Each of them fancied himſelf as deſerving, as the reſt unworthy of it: Every one bleſſed himſelf, and admired at the madneſs and impudence of the reſt, for pretending to what he imagined to be due to him alone. They beheld one another with evil eyes, and hearts full of malice, and meditated how to ſlander and defame. Their looks were ſour and ſtarched, but their joints in continual motion. Every time the door creaked, they made a thouſand bows on all hands, and as many ſubmiſſive grimaces. Not ſo much as a page could paſs by without a loving ſalute and kind look. The ſecretary happening to ruſh through the room, their ſubmiſſions were ſo profound, as if they would have kiſſed the ground he trod on. He caſting a glance like a ſhamefaced girl, preſſed through, ſaying, "Excuſe me "gentlemen, I am now in haſte." The nobleman called for his deſk, and ſat to deſpatch buſineſs, when upon a falſe alarm, thinking themſelves ſummoned to appear, one of the candidates cries, "It is I;" another, "I come;" and others, "Here I am," crowding themſelves to death againſt the door. The poor lord underſtanding what a peal of petitions attended him, knew not which way to turn himſelf. He ſilently curſed himſelf, ſaying, " It was one of the greateſt bleſſings in the world to have to give, provided there were none to aſk; and that favours, that they might not be a plague to him that beſtows them, ought to be freely offered, and never ſued for." The dunners impatient of delay, waſted inwardly, conſidering there was but one employment, and the candidates were many. The lord conſidered he could pleaſe but one, and muſt diſoblige 31; however, to be rid of them, he reſolved they ſhould be admitted, and in order to it, put on a ſtern countenance, and looked like a ſtatue, that he might appear with more majeſty. In they ruſhed in a crowd, and he perceiving they would all tongue-pad him at once, ſaid, " There is but one employment, and you are a number, I would gladly beſtow the place upon one, and ſatisfy you all." As he had dropped the laſt word the hour commenced, and the lord beſtowing the employment upon one, entailed the reverſion of it upon them all one after another, " world without end." The wretched preſumptive heirs began to wiſh one another dead, praying for pleuriſies, aſthmas, conſumptions, plagues, apoplexies, fluxes, ſudden deaths, and all manner of diſaſters. Scarce were two minutes paſt ſince the entail, when every man thought his predeceſſor had lived to the age of Methuſalem; and though the tenth man computed his turn could not come till 500 years after, yet every man was pleaſed to wait the death of his predeceſſor. Only the 31ſt, finding by his reckoning that his turn fell out exactly with the end of the world, and after the coming of Antichriſt, ſaid, "My poſſeſſion and the general conflagra-"tion hit exactly together, I ſhall make a fine "buſineſs of my employment; when I am burnt "at the day of judgment, who will oblige the "dead to pay me my wages? For my part, I "wiſh the 30th ſucceſſor a long life, for when "the employment comes to him, the world will "be at the gaſp." The lord left them ſtriving to outlive and deſtroy one another, and went himſelf away in a paſſion, to ſee them protracting their ages beyond doomſday, and even coping with eternity. He that had carried the employment, ſtood amazed to conſider what a long ſucceſſion of heirs he had got, and at laſt ſlunk away, reſolving to eat light ſuppers, and prevent taking cold. The reſt looked upon one another as ſo many mutual plagues, and reciprocally curſing their lives, each fancied diſeaſes in the other, and added to the number of his years; every ſucceſſor threatening his forerunner with death, giving him over as a gone man and, wiſhing him in the hands of phyſicians; which is the ſame as to be delivered up to the hangman.

A ſort of men that borrow after the manner of the day that is paſt, never to return again, who ſnap at a purſe, as a ſpider does at a fly, that is entangled in her web, lie tumbling in bed till the evening for want of rags to cover their nakedneſs. Among them they had laid out half a crown they had mumped, in wafers, ink, pens, and paper, which they had conſumed in begging-letters, all to the ſame effect, expreſſing how urgent the occaſion was, their reputation lying at ſtake, and even their life, with aſſurances of a ſpeedy return, and profeſſions of eternal acknowledgment. However, in caſe they ſhould not meet with money, they concluded with the *ne plus ultra* of impudent beggary, deſiring, in caſe there was no ready caſh, they would be pleaſed to ſend them ſomething of value to pawn, which ſhould be moſt carefully ſecured. By way of poſtſcript, they begged pardon for the boldneſs, proteſting they would not be ſo free with any other perſon. They had drawn about an hundred of theſe notes to be diſperſed in all the corners of the town, whither they were conveyed by one of the fraternity, a notable ſponger that had a tongue well hung, and with his grave beard and long cloak, not a little reſembled a well travelled mountebank. The herd of letter-beggars remained, computing how much money the meſſenger would bring, and a curſed noiſe there was about the ſum. Nor did it ſtop here, for they wrangled about the laying it out, and having given one another the lie, at laſt they leaped out of their beds, with ſuch fragments of ſhirts, that there was no occaſion to take them up to diſcover their lower parts. In came their mumping poſt with an air that ſpoke no relief; both his hands were at liberty, and his arms open, which foreboded emptineſs. All that appeared was a great bundle of notes. They all ſtood amazed, ſeeing their contrivance had ended in empty anſwers, and in a doleful tone ſaid, "What have we got?" "No money," replied the poor ſcoundrel, "you may divert yourſelves "with reading, ſince you have no occaſion of "telling." They began to open the notes. The firſt was to this effect: "I was never ſo "much concerned at any thing in all my life "as my not being at preſent in a condition to "ſerve you in a matter of ſo little value." "He "might have ſerved me (quoth the reader) and "have had more cauſe to be concerned." The ſecond note: "Sir, Had I received yours yeſter-

"day, I could have obliged you, and been "proud of the occaſion." "A curſe of yeſterday (ſays he) that is the daily plague of all "mumpers." The third note: "It is ſuch a "miſerable time." "O damned almanack maker (cries the ſhark), we aſk for money, and "you tell us what weather it is." The fourth note: "Sir, Your want cannot be ſo grievous "to you, as to me it is that I cannot relieve "you." "Who the devil told you ſo (exclaims the poor wretch), "doſt thou pretend to divi- "nation, thou miſer, and propheſy when you "ought to give." "No more reading" (they all cried), and making a helliſh charm, they added, "It is now night, to make up what has "been expended, let us gnaw the wafers off the "letters for our ſupper, and ſell thoſe and two "other parcels of notes we have by us to the "confectioner, who will give at leaſt four roy- "als for them to paper up comſits, wrap ſugar, "and lay under biſcuits in the oven." Says the letter carrier, "This trade of borrowing has "been out of the world theſe ten years. A "man had better give what he aſks, than en- "dure the geſtures and ſcurvy looks of thoſe "he accoſts; and if you calculate the whole, "the expence of paper and ſhoes is greater than "the profit; your only way is to [illegible] "ſharp." In this poſture were the paper-mumpers when the hour began, and the lighteſt of equipage ſaid, "We are very ceremoni-"ous with other men's money, and if we expect "it ſhould fly in at our windows, we may die "in a ditch. Rhetoric is no good picklock, "and fine words reach the ears, but not the "pockets; to liſten to one that begs, is the de-"vil. It is much eaſier to take than to aſk. "When all men hoard, it is no time to wait "their generoſity. Our buſineſs is to ſteal bare-"faced, and with conſideration, that is, conſi-"dering we muſt ſteal in ſuch manner, that "there may be enough for the accuſer, for the "clerk, for the conſtable, for the attorney, for "the ſolicitor, for the counſellor, for the jailor, "for the judge, and for ourſelves; for when "what is ſtolen ends, the hangman begins. My "friends, if they baniſh us, it is better than that "they ſhould bury us; if they pillory us, it "breaks no bones; and as for the ſhame of it, "none of our ſpectators have any; if they whip "us, we may be content, for beggars muſt not "be chooſers, and at leaſt we ſhall have the ſa-"tisfaction of hearing our white ſkins commend-"ed; and as ſoon as the ſhow is over, the doub-"let hides the laſhes. If they put us upon "the rack, we are in no danger, for all they en-

" deavour is to make us ſpeak the truth, which " we never do; therefore let us be like the tailors, and we are ſafe enough. To be ſent to " the galleys is only going into the king's ſervice " with * a bald pate; and galley ſlaves ſerve " only to ſupply the want of ſails. If they hang " us, which is the utmoſt extremity, that day " twelvemonth will be a year; and every man " that is hanged honours his parents, for though " he be never ſo mean a ſcoundrel, the blockheads of the ſpectators ſay, He is very well " born, and of a good family. Nay, if it were " only for the pleaſure of chouſing the doctor " and apothecary at one death, a man might be " well enough pleaſed to die of the hempen " diſeaſe." Gentlemen, mind your hits. Scarce were the laſt words out of his mouth, when wrapping the ſheets about them, and ſwallowing the oil that was in a lamp, they let themſelves out of the window with a blanket into the ſtreet, and away they ſcoured to ſearch cheſts, pick locks, and dive into pockets.

Two ruffians were brought to the gallows f half a dozen murders. One of them had already taken his ſwing, and the other was mounted on the ladder, with the hangman aſtride over his ſhoulders. Among the crowd of ſpectators

---

* The galley ſlaves have always their heads ſhaved.

two phyſicians, riding after fevers and plagues, made a halt, and beholding the criminals, began to weep like children, with ſuch a deluge of tears, that the people about them aſked whether thoſe that ſuffered were their ſons. They anſwered, That they did not know them, but wept to ſee men die without paying any thing to the faculty. That moment began the hour, and the criminal ſpying the doctors, ſaid, "Gen-"tlemen of the faculty, here is room for you, "if you pleaſe, for you have killed enough to "deſerve my place, and your ſkill in deſpatch-"ing men renders you worthy of the hang-"man's. Galen and Hippocrates muſt not ſend "all to the grave, hemp is as effectual as an "aphoriſm. Thoſe mules that carry you a-"bout to commit ſo many murders, are no bet-"ter than ladders to mount you to the gallows. "This is a time to ſpeak truth; had I uſed the "*recipe* inſtead of the *dagger*, I had not come "to this end, though I had maſſacred all the "ſpectators. I beg a dozen maſſes for my ſoul, "which you may eaſily foiſt into one of the "wills you forward."

A cheating gameſter was at play with a ſharping bully, upon tick, as believing it the way to draw him in deeper than if the money had lain upon the table, and ſcored the loſs with counters. He packed the cards, having let him win ſomething at firſt, the better to ſecure him, and now and then gave him a tolerable hand, but then fetched it back with intereſt; ſo that the bully ran down apace, yet not without being very ſenſible of what was put upon him. The hour came upon them, and the gameſter reckoning his counters, ſaid, "Sir, "you owe me two hundred crowns." The bully counting them over again, as if he had deſigned to pay, anſwered, "Good Sir, I muſt con-"feſs you are an abſolute maſter at your trade, "and have as much ſleight of hand as any jug-"gler, but you have not learned my trick yet, "which is, never to pay what I loſe; add that "to the reſt, and you'll be complete. You may "reckon you played for nothing, and that all "we have loſt will be our time, and that nei-"ther of us can recover."

A lean ragged chemiſt, who looked as if he had extracted the juice out of his fleſh, and calcined his clothes, had wheedled a miſer to give ear to him, as he ſtood at a man's door who ſold charcoal, and was telling him, "I am a natural "philoſopher, and by the grace of God a che-"miſt. I have found the philoſophers ſtone, "which is a medicine of life, and produces a "tranſcendant tranſmutation infinitely multipli-

"cable; for with the powder of this ſtone, by projection, I turn into the pureſt and moſt refined gold, quickſilver, iron, lead, tin, and ſilver. I can make gold of graſs, eggſhells, hair, blood, piſs, and of the very dirt. This I can do in a few days, and with ſmall expence. I dare not diſcover myſelf to any body, becauſe if the king ſhould hear of it, he would clap me into gaol to ſave India voyages and the trouble of digging in the mines. I know you to be a perſon of diſcretion, quality, and worth, and therefore have reſolved to truſt you with a ſecret of ſuch importance, and ſo admirable, that in a few days it will make you maſter of millions." The miſer liſtened to him with a greedy ear, and ſo wrapt in contemplation of the millions, that his fingers wagged for eagerneſs of telling them. His avarice could not contain itſelf within bounds, but guſhed out at his eyes, and he had in his imagination already converted his fryingpans, ſpits, kettles, and candleſticks, into bars of gold. He aſked what would be the charge of the operation? the chemiſt replied, "Little or nothing, for fifty crowns was enough to convert all the world into gold and ſilver, becauſe the greateſt expence would be in limbecks and crucibles; for the elixir, which is the vivifying ſpi-

" rit of gold, would coſt nothing, and might be " had gratis everywhere; neither ſhould a far- " thing be ſpent in charcoal, becauſe he ſubli- " mated, digeſted, ſeparated, rectified, and cir- " culated all with lime and dung." The coalman was liſtening to this tale of a tub, fretting to hear him ſay he would uſe no charcoal; but juſt then began the hour, and the coalman, well powdered with charcoal duſt, and ſmelling of the devil's perfume, falls upon the chemiſt, ſaying, " Thou vagabond, ſcoundrel, raſcal, why " doſt thou feed up that honeſt man with ima- " ginary gold?" The chemiſt in a fury gave him the lie, which the coalman ſo readily anſwered with a cuff, it was ſcarce diſcernible which was firſt. They both fell to loggerheads, and in a trice the chemiſt's battered noſe ran like a limbeck. The miſer could not part them, not daring to meddle becauſe of the duſt and ſmoot. They ſtuck ſo cloſe to one another, it was impoſſible to diſcern which was the coalman, or who had ſmooted the other. At length they were parted by the people that paſſed by, but in ſuch a condition, they looked as if they had been rolled in lampblack, and trimmed with ſnuffs of candles. Says the charcoal-man, " This poor devil tells thee he'll " make gold of dirt and old iron, and at the "ſame time his clothes are all in tatters, and "he looks as if he had been robbing the rag-"woman. I know theſe fellows, for one of "them cheated a neighbour of mine, and made "him lay out at my own houſe at leaſt a thou-"ſand crowns in coals only, and that in the "ſpace of two months, telling him he would "make gold, and he only made ſmoke and "aſhes, but at laſt ran away with all he had." "But I (quoth the chemiſt) will perform what "I undertake; and ſince you make gold and "ſilver of coals, and of the ſtones, dirt and rub-"biſh you throw among them, and of the cl[illegible]hts "of your weight, why may not I, with my art, "and the aſſiſtance of Rualdus, Geber, Avicen, "Morienus, Hermes, Vulſtadius, Crolius, Liba-"vius, and Hermes's ſamaragdine table, make "gold as well as you." The charcoal-man in a fume reply'd, "Becauſe all thoſe authors make "you mad, and you make him that believes "you a beggar. I ſell coals, and you burn them, "which is the reaſon I convert them into gold "and ſilver, and you turn them into ſoot. The "true philoſopher's ſtone is to buy cheap and "ſell dear, and a pox on all your catalogue of "hard names. I declare I would with more ſa-"tisfaction freely give my coals to burn you "with all your papers, than ſell them for ready

" money. As for you, Sir, you may make ac-
" count, that this day you became maſter of
" your money, and if you deſire to increaſe it,
" trade is the only thing that multiplies coin,
" and makes one piſtole in a month produce
" another. But if you are weary of your bags,
" empty them into a houſe of office, and when-
" ſoever you repent, you may take them out
" with more eaſe and cleanneſs, than ever you
" will recover them from the bellows and diſtil-
" lation of this miſerable wretch, who being
" himſelf a mere ragamuffin, pretends to outdo
" the treaſures of India, and defy the mines of
" Potoſi."

Three Frenchmen were travelling into Spain over the mountains of Biſcay; one of them trundled before him a wheel with the implements for grinding knives and ſciſſors; another carried before and behind two great fardles of bellows and mouſe-traps; and the third had a box of combs and pins. A poor Spaniard, who was travelling into France afoot, with his cloak on his ſhoulder, met them about half way in the aſcent of a craggy ſteep hill. They ſat down to reſt in the ſhade, and began to confer notes. The Spaniard being aſked, "Whither " he travelled?" anſwered, "He was going to " France, being fled from juſtice for ſome un-

"lucky pranks; that thence he would go into Flanders to appeaſe the judges, and gain honour in his king's ſervice, becauſe a Spaniard out of his own country could not ſerve any other maſter." Being again aſked, "How it came he had no trade or handicraft to maintain him in that long journey?" he replied, "The Spaniards had no trade but war; that thoſe who were poor and honeſt borrowed or begged by the way; and thoſe that were not ſo, robbed, as they did in all other countries." Moreover, he ſaid, "He admired they travelled from France through ſtrange countries and deſolate mountains with their goods, being always in danger of falling into the hands of highwaymen. He deſired they would inform him what moved them to leave their country, and what profit they could propoſe to themſelves in that lumber they were loaded with, which at a diſtance made them look ſo frightful, and put travellers into a quandary to determine what they were." The grinder, who ſtammered the beſt Spaniſh of the three, ſaid, "We are gentlemen diſguſted at the king of France, and have loſt our fortunes by being malecontents; but I have made three journeys into Spain, where, with this wheel and theſe ſtones, I have gathered many Spaniſh piſtoles,

" which you call Doubloons." The Spaniard, with a ſour look, replied, " Much good may do " the king of France with his faculty of curing " the evil, if he ſuffers grinders and pedlars to " be malecontents." Quoth the grinder, " You " ought to look upon us grinders as a land fleet, " for with theſe ſtones we ſharpen and wear " away your bars of gold more than your knives " and ſciſſors; take notice of this cracked pot " that drivels out the water; this ſerves us to " convey home our plate, without being expoſed to the troubles of the ſea, and dangers of " ſtorms; theſe wheels, inſtead of ſails, carry us " into all parts, and being diſperſed through all " countries with our grindſtones, combs, and " pins, we gently draw after us the revenues of " your Indian mines; and you may be ſure it is " no ſmall treaſure that France catches in its " mouſe-traps, and ſucks in with its bellows." " 'Swoons," ſaith the Spaniard, " though I knew " not all this, yet I could eaſily perceive your " bellows blew away our money, and your traps " increaſed your ſtock, but diminiſhed not our " mice; and I have obſerved, that ever ſince " you ſold bellows, we ſpend more coals, and " our pots boil never the better; that ſince you " bring us traps, we are devoured by rats and " mice; that ſince you grind, all our tools ruſt, wear, notch, and grow dull; and that in grinding our knives you ſpoil them, that we may have occaſion to buy more of you. I am now convinced you Frenchmen are the lice that devour all parts of Spain; that you bite us with the teeth of your combs, and grind us with your ſtones; nor do I think that ſcratching is any remedy againſt this itching, but that it increaſes it; and makes us tear ourſelves to pieces with our own fingers. I hope in God I ſhall ſoon return, and then will make it known there is no remedy againſt this itch, but picking you out, and preſſing you to death. What ſhall I ſay of your combs; but that they have made it faſhionable to be bald, by wearing all the hair off our heads. I will make the Spaniards more cheery of their mice, their dandruff, and their ruſt, that you may go to hell to vend your combs, bellows, and mouſe-traps." At this moment began the hour, and the Spaniard foaming with paſſion, ſaid, "The devil is at my elbow, tempting me to murder you all, and make theſe mountains as famous as formerly Ronceſvalles, for the overthrow of Charlemagne." The pedlars ſeeing him change colour, and rave, roſe up gabbling amain, crying, *Mon Dieu*, and calling him Coquin. In an ill hour did they name it, for the Spaniard drawing his dagger, and running at the grinder, made him quit his wheel, which receiving the ſtroke, tumbled down the rocks, and was beaten to ſhivers. Meanwhile the trap-merchant threw a pair of bellows at him, but he falling on with his dagger, cut all the reſt, and broke the traps to pieces. The comb-pedlar laying down his box, began to throw ſtones; the other two followed his example. All three plied the Spaniard, and he anſwered them all, there being ſuch plenty of that ſort of ammunition in the place, that they ſtumbled upon it. The Frenchmen kept their diſtance for fear of the dagger. The Spaniard guarded himſelf with his cloak, and giving a kick to the pin-box, it tumbled down the rocks and flew open, ſtrewing the mountain with pins and combs. He ſeeing the merchandiſe confounded, cried out, "I have already begun to do my king "good ſervice;" and ſeeing ſome paſſengers on mules come up and part them, deſired they would give him a certificate of the victory he had obtained over the vermine that infeſted Spain. The paſſengers laughed, underſtanding the cauſe of the fray, and carrying away the Spaniard behind one of them, left the Frenchmen buſy ſtopping the holes in the bellows, patching together the mouſe-traps, mending the wheel, and picking up the pins that were ſcattered about the clifts. The Spaniard being at a good diſtance, cried out to them, "If you "were malecontents in your own country, ye "ſcoundrels, thank me for making you ſo in "mine."

Italy, once the miſtreſs of the world, and now only retaining the memory of its former grandeur, ſeeing its vaſt monarchy cut out into ſo many parcels, to enlarge the dominions of ſeveral princes, and its territories rent aſunder to patch up many ſcattered ſtates, was now at length convinced how eaſy it was for others to take from her all that ſhe alone had ſo happily taken from them all. Now, therefore, finding herſelf poor, and extremely light, as being eaſed of the burden of many provinces, ſhe reſolved to turn ropedancer; and for want of ground to walk upon, exerciſed herſelf upon the ſtraight rope to the aſtoniſhment of the whole world. She fixed the ends of her rope, the one at Rome, and the other at Savoy. France and Spain were the ſpectators. The two kings kept a watchful eye upon her, obſerving to which ſide ſhe inclined as ſhe danced, each ſtriving to be ready to catch her if ſhe fell. Italy perceiving what they aimed at, laid hold of the republic of Venice, and graſping it with both hands as a pole to poiſe her, leaped and ſkipped at a wonderful rate; ſometimes making as if ſhe would fall to one ſide, and ſometimes to the other, diverting herſelf with the eagerneſs of both parties ſtretching out their arms to catch her, and ſurpriſing others with her ſkill in recovering herſelf, and deceiving them both. As they ſtood thus upon the catch, the hour began, and the king of France, ſeeing no probability of laying hold on her, began to looſen the end of the rope which was fixed in Savoy, that ſhe might come tumbling towards him. The Spaniſh monarch perceiving it, clapped in the ſtate of Milan, and kingdoms of Naples and Sicily, as ſupporters. Italy ſkipping in the air, diſcovered that Venice, which ſhe uſed as a pole to poiſe, at the ſame time crucified her, and therefore caſting it from her, and laying hold of the rope, ſhe ſaid, "So much for ropedancing; "for it is not for me to riſe high, when the "lookers on wiſh I may fall, and the pole that "ſhould poiſe crucifies me." Then ſuſpecting the ſupport of Savoy, ſhe betook herſelf to Rome, ſaying, "Since all are for ſeizing me, "I'll take ſanctuary in the church, where, if I "chance to fall, I ſhall not want ſomebody to "abſolve me."

The Neapolitan courſer, from whom ſome have ſtolen his oats, and others drawn away his hay, while ſome ſtrove to make of him a gelding, others a mare, and others a poſt horſe, perceiving, that, whilſt he was in the keeping of that incomparable viceroy, and invincible captain general, the Duke of Oſſuna, he would cope with Bucephalus, his furniture being compoſed of the treaſures of Venice and Brindiſi. That he had made him a ſea-horſe by his many glorious naval victories; that he had turned him to graſs in Cyprus, and watered him at Tenedos, when he dragged after the mighty ſhip Sultana from Theſſalonica, for which action Neptune owned him for his firſt begotten ſon, brought forth in oppoſition to Minerva. He remembered that great duke had ſhod him with the Turkiſh half moons, and that kicking up his heels, he had daſhed out the teeth of the Venetian lion at the prodigious battle near Raguſa, where with only fifteen ſail he defeated eighty, obliging them ſhamefully to retire with the loſs of many galleys and galleaſſes, and of the beſt of their men. Calling to mind theſe triumphs, and conſidering he had not now ſo much as a horſe-cloth, but was galled and ſnuffled becauſe they had thrown feathers into his manger; and that he was now put to draw a coach, having been once ſo mettleſome, that the Frenchmen, though good jockeys, could never ſit him. The miſerable condition he ſaw himſelf reduced to, drove him into a deſperate melancholy, and that into raving madneſs; ſo neighing fiercely, and breathing fire, he thought to have imitated the Trojan horſe, and kicking and plunging to have overthrown the city. At the noiſe, in came the magiſtrates of Naples, who throwing one of their gowns over his head, blinded him, then ſtroaking and ſpeaking him fair, they put on his collar and fetters; but as they were tying him to a ring in the ſtable, the hour began. Two of them that were fartheſt off, ſaid, "It was more convenient and cheaper "to give the courſer at once to the Pope, than "every year to ſend him a nag with a purſe, "for by their malicious eyes it might be judged "the Pope's nephews would ſome time over-"look him." The others ſurpriſed at this motion, anſwered, "That the king of Spain had "ſecured him againſt that diſtemper, by placing "three caſtles on his forehead as a ſpell; and "that they would ſooner cut off his legs, than "ſee him ſerve like a mule under long black "trappings, reſembling a pall." The two firſt replied, "They talked like heretics, in refuſing "to be Papiſts; and that no ſaddle would fit "the courſer like that of St. Peter." The others, in a paſſion, ſaid, "That to prevent the "heretics making the Pope loſe his ſtirrups in "that ſaddle, it was convenient only the king "of Spain * ſhould mount the horſe." Some were for the mitre, others the crown; and words paſſing, at laſt they came to blows, ſo that a terrible havoc had been among them, but that the elect of the people came in, and underſtanding the cauſe of the quarrel, ſaid, "This horſe, "though hard mouthed, has had many maſters, "and for the moſt part has gone to them of his "own accord, and not ſuffered himſelf to be "led. It is requiſite he be carefully looked "after, for there are in Italy many a foot that "look for baggage horſes, and jockeys ready "booted and ſpurred; and the old horſe-ſtealer "who catched him ſometimes before, has now "got a back-door to the ſtable. Neither is it "convenient any French groom ſhould curry "him, for they tickle, and do not make him "ſleek; and pray look to the Monſieurs, who "wear the canonical robes, that they may have "the better opportunity to throw their leg "over him."

---

* This author ſeems to have been a prophet, Naples being now (Anno 1742) under the government of Don Carlos, a ſon of the king of Spain.

The great czar of Muſcovy being exhauſted by the continual inroads of the Tartars, and frequent encroachments of the Turks, found himſelf neceſſitated to impoſe new taxes upon his ſubjects. To this effect he ſummoned his favourites, ſervants, miniſters, counſellors, and the commons of his court, and ſpoke to them to this effect: That they could not but be ſenſible of the great expence he was at in maintaining an army to protect them againſt the malice of their neighbouring enemies: That no ſtate could ſubſiſt without taxes: That thoſe which are impoſed in preſſing neceſſities were always juſt, and muſt be accounted no burden, being employed in the defence of thoſe that pay them, who purchaſe their ſecurity, lives, and eſtates, with that ſmall pittance, which, in a moderate and well regulated tax, falls to every man's ſhare to diſburſe: That he had aſſembled them to conſult their own conveniency, and therefore expected their anſwer would be ſuitable to their common intereſt. The firſt that ſpoke were his creatures and miniſters, ſaying, "The propoſition was ſo good and juſt, it carried along with it its anſwer and conceſſion: "That all was due to the ſupport of the prince, "and defence of the country, and therefore he "might contrive, according to his pleaſure, to

" lay whatever taxes he thought ſit on his ſubjects, becauſe all that they paid was for their " own intereſt and ſecurity; and conſequently " the greater the burdens he laid upon them, " the more he would convince them of the con" fidence he repoſed in their loyalty, and the " greater would be their honour." The czar heard them with ſatisfaction, but not without ſome miſtruſt, and therefore ordered the commons to anſwer for themſelves. They, whilſt the courtiers harangued, had privately whiſpered about, and pitched on one to be their ſpeaker, and deliver their ſentiments. He having taken a convenient place, ſaid, " Great Sir, " your dutiful ſubjects, whoſe mouth I am, ren" der you their moſt humble thanks for your " care in protecting and defending them; they " yield a blind obedience to your will, and " wholly ſubmit themſelves to your pleaſure, as " becomes a people born under your juriſdiction, " who have ingrafted in them a hereditary love " and reverence for you; and they beg leave to " put you in mind, it is their glory they have " made this appear during your whole reign, " which God long continue over us; they are " ſenſible you make their protection your care, " and that it is that which makes you deſcend " from being a ſovereign over them and their

" fortunes, to become a father to every one, a " teſtimony of your goodneſs which they infinitely value. They are not ignorant of the " many preſſing and unexpected accidents which " bring upon you unavoidable expences, not to " be ſpared with honour to you, or ſafety to " them, and they are convinced you are too far " exhauſted to defray them. I, in name of all " your ſubjects, freely offer all they poſſeſs without reſerving any thing, but muſt alſo offer " two things to your conſideration. The one " is, that if you now take all your ſubjects have, " you will drain that ſource which is always to " ſupply you and your heirs; and if you undo " them, you do that which you fear your enemies ſhould do; and the conſequence is ſo " much the more fatal to you, by how much " their being ruined by the enemy, is dubious, " and by you certain; and they who adviſe " you to deſtroy yourſelf, to prevent being deſtroyed, are rather penſioners to the enemy, " than faithful counſellors to you. Remember " the countryman (in Æſop) to whom Jove " gave a hen that every day laid an egg of " gold for his maintenance. He ſuffering himſelf to be deluded by avarice, fancied, that a " fowl that laid every day a golden egg, muſt " have rich mines of that metal within her,

" and therefore thought it better to ſeize all at " once, than receive it by little and little. The " gods having ſo ordered it, he killed the hen, " and was left without the treaſure or the egg. " Do not you, great Sir, verify this fable of the " philoſopher, for if you do, you will become a " fable to your people. A prince of a poor " people is rather a poor man, or poverty itſelf, " than a prince. He who enriches his ſubjects, " has as many treaſures as his ſubjects. He who " impoveriſhes them has ſo many hoſpitals; he " has as many terrors as men, and fewer men " than enemies. Riches may be forſaken at " any time, but poverty cannot. We ſeldom " endeavour to quit the former, but always the " latter. The other thing I offer to your con" ſideration is, that your preſent wants proceed " from two cauſes, one, the immenſe frauds and " depredations of thoſe about you; the other, " the preſent extraordinary emergencies. There " is no doubt but the firſt named is the fore" moſt as to time; and whether it be not the " greateſt, belongs to you to examine. Divide, " therefore, the ſupply you require as you ſhall " think fit, laying one part on thoſe who have " made a property of your revenues, and the " other as a tax upon your ſubjects, and then " none but a traitor can complain." Thus had he ſpoke when the hour began, and the czar riſing up, ſaid, “ Let him that hath taken it “ from me reſtore what is wanting of what I “ had, and what is wanting after that let my “ people pay; and that this may not be delay- “ ed, all you and your friends, who at a diſtance “ like ſpongers have ſucked my revenue, ſhall “ be left as you were when you came to my “ ſervice, only allowing your ſalaries.” So great and univerſal was the joy of the commons, hearing this juſt decree of the czar, that they unanimouſly gave him the title of Auguſtus, and kneeling before him, ſaid, “ As an “ acknowledgment we agree to pay whatſoever “ you ſhall impoſe upon us; and that done, “ will of our own accord double the ſum; and “ ordain, that this free offering may remain as “ a perpetual duty, payable every time you “ ſhall reſume what has been taken from you, “ whereby it will come to paſs, that covetous “ men will be afraid to receive what you freely “ give them.”

The Hollanders, who are beholden to the ſea for the ground they live on, which is only ſome ſcraps of land they have ſtolen from it, under the ſhelter of heaps of clay, they call dikes; having quelled their inteſtine broils by an univerſal trade, after they had erected themſelves into a free ſtate, and extended their territories, pretending to be the firſt begotten of the ocean, and conceiting that the ſea, which gave them the land it once covered, for their habitation, would not refuſe them that which compaſſes it; having covered it with ſhips, and peopled it with pirates, reſolved at once in ſeveral places to encroach upon the eaſt and weſt. They go to our fleets for gold and ſilver, as our fleets go for it to the Indies. They look upon it as the cheaper and ſhorter way to take it from thoſe that bring it, than from the earth that produces it. The negligence of an admiral, or the favour of a ſtorm, furniſh them with plate at an eaſier rate than the mines could do. In theſe undertakings they have been forwarded, favoured, and aſſiſted by all the princes of Europe, who behold the grandeur of the Spaniſh monarchy with envious eyes. Encouraged by theſe powerful ſupports, they have eſtabliſhed a trade in India, ſettled commerce in Japan, and ſtill perſiſting, after many diſappointments, have at length poſſeſſed themſelves of the beſt part of Brazil *, where they have not only the power

---

* This was wrote before the concluſion of the peace betwixt Spain and Holland, when the Dutch ſtood poſſeſſed of a great part of Brazil, and invaded the Portugueſe conqueſts in India.

of government, but the profit of the ſugar and tobacco, which enriches them and beggars us. In this place, which is the inlet to the Eaſt and Weſt Indies, they reſide like cormorants, ready to ſwallow ſhips and whole fleets, alarming Peru and Potoſi; for that it appears by geography, that they may gradually, without wetting their feet, ſteal to thoſe mountains, if weary of the ſea, they ſhould think much to creep along the coaſt down to Rio de la Plata, and Buenos Ayres, and to ſecure to themſelves the Straits of Magellan. That world devouring aſſembly ſat conſulting over a terreſtial globe and ſea chart, with a pair of compaſſes, leaping over climes and countries, and making choice of provinces that were none of their own, and among them the penſioner with a pair of ſciſſors in his hand, ready to cut the world according to his fancy. In this poſture they were when the hour began, and a decripid old fellow ſnatching the ſciſſors out of his hand, ſaid, "Gluttons, who are "greedy of provinces, always die for want of "digeſtion; no ſurfeit ſo dangerous as that of "dominion. The Romans, from a narrow ſpot "of ground, too little to ſow half a buſhel of "corn, ſwallowed up all their neighbours; and "extending their avarice, brought the whole "world under the yoke of their firſt plough;

" and it being certain, that whoſoever pours " himſelf out, waſtes as much as he extends; ſo " they no ſooner had much to loſe, but they be- " gan to loſe much; for ambition gathers more " than force can preſerve. Whilſt they were " poor they conquered the rich, who making " them rich, and being left poor, took to them- " ſelves the cuſtoms inherent to poverty, infeſt- " ing them with thoſe of riches and luxury, and " by that means deſtroyed them, revenging " themſelves on them with the very riches they " gave them. The Aſſyrians, Greeks, and Ro- " mans are ſo many ſkeletons to inſtruct us; it " is fitter for us to take warning by, than to " imitate thoſe ruined monarchies. The more " we raiſe our ſmall weight, and the nearer we " bring it in the * Roman balance of power, to " the great maſs we would outweigh, the leſs " we ſhall appear; but the more we draw it " back, the better our ſmall portion will turn " the vaſt weight that ſtands againſt it; and if " we draw back to the laſt notch, one pound of " ours will poiſe a thouſand of theirs. Trajano " Boccalini hinted at this ſecret in the weight " of his politic touchſtone, and it is verified in " the monarchy of Spain, from which we aim to

---

* The ſtillyard, which weighs great or ſmall things by putting forward or drawing back the weight upon the beam.

" draw away weight, which added to ours, will
" diminiſh it by the addition. Of ſubjects to
" become a free ſtate was prodigious; to keep
" ourſelves ſo, is a work that requires all our
" application. France and England, which aſ-
" ſiſted us to cut off from Spain that part of its
" dominion which was formidable to them, will
" not, for the ſame reaſon, permit us to ſwell to
" that greatneſs they may have cauſe to fear
" us. The axe which joins to itſelf all it cuts
" off from the tree, will not be eſteemed an uſe-
" ful inſtrument, but rather an encumbrance.
" They will bear with us as long as they think
" we ſtand in need of them, but if once they
" imagine they can have occaſion for us, they
" will meditate our ruin and deſtruction. He
" who ſees a beggar, on whom he has beſtowed
" alms, grow rich, either aſks him to refund or
" lend. We can gain nothing, but what the
" princes who look on will covet for themſelves.
" As they deſpiſe the neighbour that is upon
" the loſing, ſo they fear him that is upon the
" getting hand. We by diſperſing, act for the
" king of Spain againſt ourſelves; for ſhould he,
" to divide and weaken us, wilfully loſe the
" countries we take from him, it were in him a
" ſtratagem and no loſs; and he will never be
" ſo able to take what we have, as when he has

" ſuffered us to take what he has ſo far from " him and us. Brazil rather ſucks and unpeoples Holland, than ſtrengthens it. It is enough " for thieves not to reſtore what they have ſtolen, " without continuing their thefts for ever, which " ſooner prefers them to the gallows than to the " throne." The penſioner ſnatching back the ſciſſors in a pet, ſaid, " Though Rome loſt itſelf, yet Venice holds out, and was at firſt but " a town-ſtealer, as we are. The gallows you " ſpeak of is oftener the lot of the unfortunate " than of robbers; and all the world over, the " great thief hangs the little one. He that picks " a pocket is ever a thief; he that ſtole provinces and kingdoms was always a king; the right " of monarchs is in the longeſt ſword. It is natural for one to be engendered out of the corruption of another, he that is corrupted, is " the cauſe of him that is engendered. A carcaſs complains not of the worms that eat it, " becauſe it breeds them. Let every man look " to himſelf that he does not putrify, otherwiſe he will be father to his own worms. All " things conſume, but the ſmall ſooner than the " greater. When it ſhall come to paſs that they " fear who pitied us, we will pity them we feared, which is a good exchange. If we can, let " us be what they are, who were what we are.

"All the hints you have given are good; let "not the kings of France and England hear of "them; but do you put us in mind hereafter, "for that is an obſtacle in the beginning, which "proves good advice in the end."

The great Duke of Tuſcany, who by adding five letters, which compoſe the word Great, to his title, has gained the ill will of all other princes, was private in his cloſet with a ſervant whom he intruſted with his greateſt ſecrets. They diſcourſed of the beauty of his cities, the greatneſs of his territories, the trade of Leghorn, and the victories obtained by his galleys. From this they changed ſubject, and fell upon the great honour his family had attained to, being allied to moſt monarchs and princes of Europe, by its matches with France, whereby the kings of France, Spain, and Great Britain, were, by the mother's ſide, deſcended from it. Thus were they diſcourſing when the hour began, and the ſervant, as it were in a prophetic rapture, ſaid, "Sir, your highneſs of a private citizen was "made a prince. Remember man: Whilſt you "was content to be a prince, you was the richeſt "among them, and now you look upon yourſelf "as father-in-law of kings, and ſon-in-law of "emperors. You are duſt; and if you happen "to be father-in-law to France, and the curſes

" of match-making fall upon you, to duſt you " ſhall return. Your country is fruitful, your " cities wealthy, your ports full of trade, your " galleys ſucceſsful, your alliances great, and on " all theſe accounts your ſtate is truly regal; " but this minute I have diſcovered in it ſuch " ſtains as ſully and leſſen the value of it, which " are theſe; the remembrance the ſubjects re" tain that once they were equals; the republic " of Lucca, which ſtarted up in the midſt of us; " the garriſons the King of Spain has in Tuſ" cany; and the addition of the title Great to " that of Duke, which all your neighbours " envy." The Duke, who before had not reflected upon any of theſe things, ſaid, " What " method ſhall I uſe to take out theſe ſtains?" The ſervant anſwered, " They are ſo grounded " in, it is impoſſible to take them out without " cutting off the piece, which is a remedy worſe " than the diſeaſe, becauſe it is better to be " ſtained than ragged. If the ſtains I ſpeak of " be taken out with the piece, your highneſs will " ſcarce have a rag left, but will be rent to tat" ters. The nature of theſe ſtains is, they are " cleanſed by ſinking in deeper, and not by be" ing taken out. Your highneſs muſt make uſe " of faſting-ſpittle, and ſuck in by little and lit" tle; and what you now ſpend in portions for "queens, lay it out in ſtopping the eyes and ears "of thoſe who obſerve you."

The moſt ſerene republic of Venice, which in regard of its great wiſdom and prudence, is as it were the brain of Europe where the judgment reſides, was aſſembled in full ſenate. That aſſembly was compoſed of ſeveral ſounds, ſome more ſolid, others more quick, the common difference betwixt old and young, yet all ſkilful, ſome by experience, and others by information, making together ſuch a harmony, that all the princes in the world dance to their muſic. The Doge, crowned head of that powerful free nation, ſat on a high throne with three counſellors on each ſide; on his right was one chief of the Quarantie, and on the left two; next theſe were the ſecretaries who count the balls, and in their places ſtood two officers, whoſe buſineſs it is to gather them. The ſilence was ſtupendous in ſo numerous an aſſembly, and ſo far exceeded that of a deſert; it was hard to perſuade the eyes, but that the audience was made up of ſtatues and not of men, ſo very mute were the very diſeaſes in the old, and ſo bridled the fierceneſs of the young. At length the doge broke the ſilence with theſe words: "Malice brings "diſcord into the world; double dealing con- "tinues it, and diſſimulation makes him tha

" ſows it beloved even by him that ſuffers by " it. The wars we have occaſioned among our " friends, not thoſe we made with our enemies, " have given us peace and victory. We ſhall " be free ſo long as we employ others in ſubdu" ing one another. Our light ſprings from diſ" ſention; we are like the ſpark that is produ" ced from the ſtriking of flint and ſteel. The " more monarchs batter one another, the more " we ſhine. Italy, ſince the decay of the em" pire, is like to a rich and beautiful heireſs, " who, her parents dying, was left to the care " of guardians and truſtees, and deſires to be " married. But the truſtees having divided her " fortune between themſelves, and being loth to " reſtore, and covetous to keep what they have, " ſome of them miſrepreſent her to the King of " Spain, who courts her; and the others to the " King of France, who aſks her in marriage, at " the ſame time finding thoſe faults in the ſuit" ors which they ſee in themſelves. Theſe falſe " truſtees are the princes of Italy, and among " them it is not to be denied, but that we alſo " have ſeized a great part of her fortune. The " two ſuitors now preſs hard to carry their miſ" treſs. We have made uſe of the King of France " to put by the Catholic King, who being ſo near " a neighbour in Naples and Milan, makes ſigns

" to her, and from his own windows overlooks " her. The Moſt Chriſtian King, who being at a " diſtance, could not gallant, nor ſo much as ſee " her, and therefore made love by letter: Now, " by the aſſiſtance of Savoy, Mantua, and Parma, " and his approach to Pignerol, he ogles and " courts her, and this obliges us to cheat him " of her. This is eaſy to do, becauſe there is " leſs trouble in caſting out the French, than in " bringing them in; they expel others with " their fury, and themſelves with their haughti" neſs. However, this ſnare muſt be ſo laid, " that at the ſame time we break the match, we " may receive thanks for promoting it. The " Moſt Chriſtian King has bent his thoughts upon " Lorrain *, his ſucceſs in Germany is dubious, " and ſubjects poor, which things diſcourage his " partiſans in Italy, ſo that we ſhall not find any " great difficulty in attaining our ends, for his " own motions will diſguiſe ours, and we need " not raiſe jealouſies in thoſe that have confided " in him, ſince their repentance ſaves us that " labour. It is my opinion we ſhall ſubdue the " King of France by encouraging him to go on " in his great undertakings, and by heightening

---

* He has ſince gained it (Anno 1742) as a revenue for King Staniſlaus, though after his deceaſe, it is to be annexed to the crown of France.

" his credulity. Our utmoſt endeavours muſt " be uſed to raiſe the eſteem he has of his favourite; for this man who takes from him all " that he adds to himſelf, leſſens him as he grows " great. As long as the ſubject has the aſcendant over his king, and the king is ſubject to his " ſervant, the ſubject will be hated as a traitor, " and the king undervalued as of a mean ſpirit. " The way to deſtroy a king publicly with ſafety, is to ſtand up for his favourite. I know " not whether Ravilliac was more fatal to his " father, than Richlieu has been to him. This " I know, that betwixt them they have robbed " him of both parents, the firſt of his father, the " ſecond of his mother. May Richlieu continue, for he is like a diſeaſe, which by continuance either conſumes itſelf, or him that endures it. It is requiſite we caſt an eye upon " the ſucceſſion of the crown of France *, which " is like to fall to the king's brother, whoſe generous nature we have reaſon to hope we may " impoſe upon. He is like a fire that may be " blown away, yet kindles itſelf. He is diſobliged at the favours he receives, whereby " he has offended the king of Spain, and ſown

---

* Lewis the Thirteenth had that time no iſſue, and conſequently it was ſuppoſed the crown would devolve to his brother the Duke of Orleans.

" the ſeeds of diſſention, which we may improve " to our benefit. France is diſſatisfied at the " prime miniſter's pretending to be of the blood " royal, which he claims by forged genealogies, " and is diſguſted to ſee all places of profit and " truſt in the hands of his kindred and friends. " They remember the beheading of Montmo- " rency, and the baniſhing ſo many great men; " and they ſuſpect that violence, and not right, " will take place in the ſucceſſion to the crown. " The affairs of Germany are paſt compoſing, " the Palatine being diſpoſſeſſed, the Duke of " Lorrain outed, and the Duke of Saxony and " other Proteſtants of the empire conſpiring a- " gainſt the houſe of Auſtria. Italy ſeems to de- " ſpair of peace by reaſon of the garriſons the " French have within it. The King of Spain " has his hands full with the Dutch, who have " taken what he had in Holland, and aim to rob " him of what he has, being already poſſeſſed of " the beſt part of Braſil, which furniſhes their " fleets with the trade of ſugar, tobacco, and " Braſil wood, and having fortified themſelves in " one of the Leeward Iſlands. Beſides all this, " he is engaged to ſupport the Emperor, and " maintain the ſtate of Milan againſt the French. " We, like the ſpring in a ſtricking watch, muſt " move theſe hands every hour and every mo-

" ment, without being perceived, continually " ſounding abroad without ever turning back. " Our politics work like the glaſſmakers, who " blow things into form, and we ſow fire to pro- " duce ice." Hither was he come when the hour began, the wonderful influence whereof inſpiring the politic brain of a republican of the *Capi Duobi*, made him diſcourſe to this effect: " Venice is the very figure and reſemblance of " Pontius Pilate." *Probo*, " Pilate, out of mere " policy, condemned the juſt, and waſhed his " hands:" *Ergo*, " Pilate diſmiſſed Barabbas, " who was ſedition itſelf, and apprehended Jeſus " that was peace itſelf." *Igitur*, " Pilate poſi- " tively ſaid, What I have written, I have writ- " ten." *Tenet conſequentia.* " Pilate delivered " the peace and ſafety of the world to muti- " neers, to be crucified." *Non poteſt negari.* All the aſſembly made a cry, and fell into confuſion, the Doge ordered the republican, *nem. con.* to be put into irons, and that his genealogy ſhould be inquired into, for that it was viſible he was ſome way deſcended from ſomebody that depended on another, who was a friend to ſome one that was acquainted with ſome perſon that came from another that had ſomething of a Spaniard.

The moſt illuſtrious Duke of Genoa aſſembled the ſenate of that republic, to give audience to his Moſt Chriſtian Majeſty's ambaſſador, who harrangued them to this effect: "Moſt ſerene "republic, the king my maſter, who has always "had the ſame regard for the liberty of Italy, "as to the majeſty of his own crown; endea"vouring to ſupport it with all his power, and "zealous for your good, without aiming at any "other intereſt, but that of the ſeveral princes, "who there poſſeſs the moſt beautiful part of "the world, has commanded me, in his name, "to put you in mind, that he, as a moſt dutiful "ſon of the church, and good neighbour to all "the princes about him, is willing to juſtify his "proceedings before you; and make known "his good will and affection to all the reſt. You "better know what you endure than we, who "only hear or ſee at a diſtance. You have been "long in continual wars, proceeding from your "controverſies with the Duke of Savoy, whoſe "neighbourhood was ever troubleſome, and a "cauſe of jealouſy to you; wherein his Catholic "Majeſty ſtood by you, under the title of Ar"bitrator. This has given you occaſion to be"hold the plains overflowed with blood, and co"vered with dead bodies; cities ruined with "long ſieges and ſtorms; the country devoured "by quartering of ſoldiers; your territories over-

"run by Germans, a fierce nation, attended by "hereſy in ſpirituals, and plague and famine in "temporals. You will not find the king, my "maſter, any way concerned in the introducing "of theſe calamities; for he has only ſupported "the weaker ſide, not with a deſign it ſhould "grow more powerful by victory, but that defending itſelf, the adverſary might not become "more formidable; that ſo every man's right "might ſubſiſt, and be ſupported; and Monferrat, which has been the original of all theſe "troubles, might not become the reward of any "man's ambition. To this purpoſe he has "maintained mighty armies, and ſometimes "headed them in perſon, overcoming the difficulties of winter ſnows on the Alps, to make "way to relieve you, and returned triumphant "with no other profit but this glory. Now all "the world is in diſtraction, ſince the ſupporting of you has made him powerful enemies in "all parts, he flatters himſelf with the hopes, "that this republic will look upon him as no "leſs a friend than the king of Spain, in regard "to the liberty of its parts, for by obſerving an "exact neutrality, you will ſhow you are ſenſible of the king my maſter's goodly zeal, and "the juſtice of his arms." The Duke perceiving the ambaſſador had ended his ſpeech, anſwered thus: "We bleſs God that we can do no more "than what we have hitherto done towards ſerving his Moſt Chriſtian Majeſty with true zeal "and affection. We have been eye witneſſes "of what you have ſaid, and it is eaſy to perſuade men to believe what they ſee. It is "true, this confidence might be ſomewhat diſturbed by your king's countenancing, in the "relief of Aldiguerre, the troubles the Duke of "Savoy raiſed, to ruin, or at leaſt diſturb this "commonwealth, which, had it not been relieved "by his Catholic Majeſty, muſt have been in "great diſtreſs; beſides that, it might be alarmed at the French poſſeſſing themſelves of Pignerol, Suſa, and Caſal in Italy; not unlike "thoſe, who, under colour of parting a fray, run "away with the cloaks of thoſe that quarrel; "and to add to this jealouſy, his Moſt Chriſtian "Majeſty has been to the Duke of Lorrain like "a ſmoky chimney, which turns a man out of "his houſe with tears in his eyes. However, "without regarding theſe actions, we are, and "ever ſhall be moſt truly affectionate to his "crown, as far as is conſiſtent with the great "obligations this republic, and all the members "of it owe to the monarch of Spain, by whoſe "power we are protected, by whoſe grandeur "we are enriched, and in whoſe ſincerity and

" piety we reſt ſecure; and therefore, that we " may come to a reſolution, as to the point of " neutrality you demand; it is requiſite we aſ- " ſemble in council all the members of this com- " monwealth, who are the ſupport of our com- " merce." The ambaſſador and ſenate approved of it, which was done, with orders to the meſſenger to acquaint them to what end they were ſummoned, and that they muſt appear immediately. The officer obeyed his orders, delivered his meſſage, and requiring their ſpeedy compliance.

The hour came upon them juſt then, and the Genoeſe growing into a fume, bid the meſſenger tell the Moſt Serene Duke, " That having " heard the propoſal made in the King of " France's name, and being about to go to " obey his commands, they found themſelves " ſo entangled in the Spaniſh funds, that they " were not able to ſtir; yet would have gone " to wait on him with thoſe funds at their tails, " but that they were fixed in Naples and Sicily, " and rivetted to the revenues of Spain: That " they could not but acquaint his Serenity that " the King of France was like one that rows in " a boat, who turns his back to the place he is " going to, and draws towards him, and there- " fore it became him to look out ſharp." The meſſenger returning, delivered his anſwer with an audible voice: The ambaſſador took ſnuff, and was out of countenance, ſetting his hat and wig to be gone: The Duke, to nettle him the more, ſaid, "Tell his Moſt Chriſtian Majeſty, "that ſince this republic cannot ſerve him as "he deſires, they promiſe him, that in caſe he "continues his reſolution of entering Italy, an "anniverſary for the ſouls of the French, that "ſhall happen to go bear thoſe company, who "made a churchyard of the wood of Pavia, paving it with ſkulls, and to bear his majeſty's "charges all the while he ſhall be priſoner in "the duchy of Milan, and an hundred thouſand ducats ready money towards his ranſom. "And do you take that hiſtory of the Emperor "Charles V. to divert you by the way, after "which it may ſerve your great king for an itinerary." The Frenchman in a paſſion replied, "You have ſpoken like good and loyal ſubjects of the Catholic King, whom thoſe very "funds you talk of, and for which you refuſe "me a neutrality, have made his tranſmarine "and foreign ſlaves and vaſſals."

The heretical Germans, among whom there are as many hereſies as men, who conſume themſelves in ſupporting the tyranny of the Swedes, and the treachery of the Electors of

Saxony and Brandenburg, and the Landgrave of Heſſe, perceiving themſelves infected with the French diſeaſe, reſolved to cure themſelves at once. Conſidering that the ſalivation of ſo many paſt calamities, nor the flux they were put into at Norlinguen, nor the many bleedings, *uſque ad animi deliquium*, of ſo many overthrows, had availed nothing, they gathered all the phyſicians, chemiſts, and mountebanks they could find, and having made known to them their diſtemper, aſked their advice thereupon. Some were of opinion, that the only remedy was to purge out the French humours that were crept into their bones. Others affirming the diſtemper lay altogether in their heads, preſcribed medicines to carry off the humour, and diſcharge them of dull notions, by the help of Hippocrates's *Tetragonum*, ſo much applauded by Galen, to which the ſmoke of tobacco exactly anſwers. Others more ſuperſtitious, and magically inclined, affirm it was no natural diſeaſe they were troubled with, but were exagitated by evil ſpirits, and that as perſons poſſeſſed they ſtood in need of exorciſms. In the midſt of the learned diſpute the hour began, and a phyſician of Prague, with an audible voice, ſaid, "There is no cure for this diſ-
"eaſe of the Germans, becauſe all their mala-

" dies and diſtempers are only to be cured with
" a regular diet; and as long as Luther and
" Calvin keep their taverns open, and they have
" thirſty throats, and as long as they do not ab-
" ſtain from the French cooks-ſhops and baw-
" dy-houſes, they will never be ſo temperate as
" they ought to be."

The Grand Seignior, or Emperor of the Turks, a monarch raiſed by the forgeries and deceit of Mahomet to a vaſt dominion, ſummoned together all his viziers, baſhaws, beglerbegs, generals, and other eminent men of his mighty porte, all or moſt of them being renegados, as alſo the Chriſtian captives, who, lying in perpetual ſlavery, ſuffer a lingering death in the ſeven towers of Conſtantinople, without hope of redemption, by reaſon of the pride of that haughty monarch, who looks upon it as a diminution of his grandeur to ranſom ſlaves, and deems that heavenly virtue of mercy as proper only to the vulgar. The concourſe was therefore extraordinary, and greater the expectation of all men, becauſe there had been no precedent of ſuch an aſſembly in the memory of man. The Grand Seignior looking on it as too great a condeſcenſion that his voice ſhould be heard, or his perſon ſeen by his ſubjects, being ſeated on a lofty throne behind a curtain, which allowed only ſome ſcant paſſage to the ſight, made a ſign to the aſſembly to give ear to what things one of the * Moriſcos, who had been expelled Spain, offered to him by way of advice. The Moriſco, after proſtrating himſelf at the Emperor's feet, aroſe again and ſaid, "We the true and conſtant Mahometans, who, through the courſe of a tedious "captivity in Spain, have for many years privately entertained in our hearts the law of the "prophet deſcended from Agar, humbly ac"knowledging the unparalleled goodneſs of the "almighty monarch of the world, the great "Emperor of the Turks, in receiving us the miſerable relics of that expulſion, have reſolved "among ourſelves to do his Moſt Potent Ma"jeſty ſome conſiderable ſervice, which muſt "be grounded on our knowledge and experi"ence, having no fortunes to offer, as being a "multitude ſtripped of all we poſſeſſed. To "this effect, the firſt thing we propoſe is, that "for the honour of our nation, and as a reward "to our invincible generals and commanders, "in continuing the memory of their exploits, "it is convenient that, after the manner of

---

* The Moriſcos were the race of the Moors in Spain, moſt whereof were counterfeit Chriſtians, and conſpired to bring in the Moors again, for which reaſon they were all expelled by King Philip III.

"Greece, Rome, and Spain, colleges and univerſities be erected, and rewards be aſſigned "to learning, for by it, after the death of the "monarchs, and extirpation of the monarchies, "the Greek and Latin languages ſtill glorioully "ſurvive, and in them, in ſpite of death, do ſtill "flouriſh their heroic actions, virtues, and names, "being reſcued from the oblivion of the grave "by thoſe ſtudies which enriched their minds, "and made their nations ceaſe to be barbarous. "The ſecond propoſition is, that the laws and "cuſtoms of the Romans be received, ſo far "forth as they are not directly oppoſite to our "law, to the end that policy may be advanced, "diſorders ſuppreſſed, virtue rewarded, vice puniſhed, and the diſtribution of juſtice may be "ſo eſtabliſhed, that neither affection, malice, "nor bribery, may have place, but ſure and "univerſal method be ſettled in all parts. The "third is, that for our greater benefit in fight, "our crooked ſimitars be changed for Spaniſh tucks, becauſe they are more handy either to defend or offend, the great circular "motion of cutting being ſaved by thruſting, "by which means, whenever we have come to "handiblows with the Spaniards, we have ſuſtained unſpeakable loſs, that nation exceeding all others in handling their rapier; and

" beſides, the ſwords are lighter of carriage, and " eaſier to wield. The fourth, that to preſerve " health, and recover it when impaired, the uſe " of wine be by all means allowed, becauſe moderately taken, it is the beſt vehicle of nutriment, and moſt efficacious medicine. It is " alſo a rich fund to increaſe the Grand Seignior's and his ſubjects revenues, there being " ſeveral liquors produced by the grape which " create a conſiderable trade. Nay, it is more " powerful and effectual than opium to raiſe the " ſpirits and excite the blood to bold undertakings. Neither ought the prohibition in our " law, which has been already partly diſpenſed " with, to be any hinderance, until a proper interpretation to our purpoſe may be found. " For the putting all we have propoſed in execution, we offer to furniſh ſchemes and directors, who ſhall carry it on without any charge " or trouble to the public; and are aſſured it " will add much to the grandeur and glory of " all the Great Emperor of Conſtantinople's dominions."

Scarce had he uttered the laſt word, when Sinan Baſſa, a renegado, ſtarted up, foaming with rage, and ſaid, " If all the devils in hell " had conſpired againſt the Turkiſh monarchy, " they could not have invented four ſuch cur-

“ ſed plagues as have been propoſed by this
“ Moriſco dog, who, among Chriſtians, was an
“ ill Mahometan, and would be an ill Chriſtian
“ among the Turks. Theſe fellows would have
“ rebelled in Spain, and here they would deſtroy
“ us. The reaſon for expelling them there was
“ not greater than this; it will be convenient
“ we revenge ourſelves on thoſe who ſent them
“ among us, by returning them back. Don
“ John of Auſtria had not more deſtructive deſigns
“ againſt our power, when at Lepanto,
“ opening the veins of ſo many Janiſaries, he
“ cauſed the fiſh to ſwim in blood, and made a
“ new red ſea not inferior to the old. The Perſian
“ green turban doth not more maliciouſly
“ aim at the overthrow of our empire; nor did
“ D. Peter Giron, Duke of Oſſuna, and Viceroy
“ of Naples and Sicily, with his fleets and land
“ forces, and terror of his name, more fiercely
“ endeavour to obliterate the memory of our
“ half-moons, whoſe light he often ſullied, when
“ our veſſels ſcarce thought themſelves ſecure of
“ him at Pera and Conſtantinople, than thou,
“ infernal dog, with thoſe four propoſitions has
“ laboured to do. Hell-hound, monarchies are
“ upheld by the ſame arts that erect them.
“ They have always been raiſed by ſoldiers, and
“ always corrupted by pedants. Kings hold

" their dominions by the ſword, not by their " books. Armies gain and defend them, not " univerſities. Victories make them great and " formidable, not arguments. Battles beſtow " kingdoms and crowns, learning caps and de- " grees. Whenever a ſtate begins to aſſign re- " wards for learning, dignities are conferred on " drones; craft is honoured, ſubtilty exalted, " and favour rewarded, and then the conqueror " depends on the doctor, the ſoldier on the " ſcholar, and the ſword on the pen. The ig- " norance of the people is the greateſt ſecurity " of princes. Learning, which inſtructs, makes " them mutinous. Learned ſubjects rather con- " ſpire than obey, rather examine their ſove- " reign than reſpect him. No ſooner they un- " derſtand, but they deſpiſe him. No ſooner " can they know what liberty is, than they de- " ſire it. They can judge whether he that " reigns is worthy to rule, and then begin to " reign over the prince. Learning is the cauſe " that peace is ſought after, becauſe it ſtands in " need of it; and peace that is ſought after " draws on the moſt dangerous war. No war " is ſo deſtructive, as that he endures who ſeems " to covet peace; the latter ſues with words " and embaſſies, and the former makes its ad- " vantage of the fear that appears in the en-

" treaties. When a nation affects ſcholars and
" writers, gooſe quills take place of ſwords and
" muſkets. Ink in writing is more meritorious
" than blood ſpilt. A ſheet of paper ſigned is
" of more force than armour proof againſt ſhot;
" and the hand of a coward, by virtue of the
" pen, extracts from the inkhorn honours, revenues,
" titles, and grandeur. Many vile
" wretches wear the black robe. Many raiſe
" eſtates by their writings, and many great men
" are deſcended from ſcribblers. Rome, when
" beginning in a ſmall circumference, ſcarce big
" enough to ſow two buſhels of corn, it grew to
" a vaſt commonwealth, uſed neither doctors
" nor books, but ſoldiers and weapons. All
" there was violence, and no ſtudy; they raviſhed
" the women they wanted, ſubdued what
" was near, and aimed at what was farther off.
" No ſooner did Cicero, Brutus, Hortenſius, and
" Cæſar, introduce harangues and declamations,
" than they began ſeditions, and conſpiring, deſtroyed
" one another, and others, themſelves,
" and even the commonwealth. The emperors
" and the empire were deſtroyed, and overthrown
" by the ambition of the orators. Even
" among birds only thoſe ſuffer impriſonment
" in cages which talk and ſing; and the more
" perfectly they do it, the cloſer they are kept.

" Then the ſchools were made the magazines " againſt arms; orations ſanctified crimes, and " condemned virtue; and whilſt the tongue " reigned, triumphs were ſubject to the power " of words. The Greeks ſuffered by the ſame " itch of learning; they were proud of their " academies, which vied with their armies; and " their philoſophers were a plague to their generals. Wit became the judge of valour, and " they grew rich in books, and poor in triumphs. " You ſay their heroes ſtill live in their famous " authors, and their language ſtill ſurvives, " though their monarchy be extinct. The " ſame happens to a dagger which wounds a " man, which continues when the man is gone, " and yet that is no ſatisfaction to the dead " man. It were better the monarchy ſurvived, " though dumb, and without a language, than " that the language ſhould laſt without a monarchy. Greece and Rome are become " echoes, forming in the hollow emptineſs of " their majeſty, not whole ſounds, but the very " extremities of abſent words. Thoſe very " authors that extolled them, could allot themſelves but ſo ſhort a life at the pleaſure of the " reader, that in ſome it reaches only the underſtanding, in others, goes not beyond curioſity. Spain, whoſe people being in danger,

" were always prodigal of life, covetous of death, and impatient of age, when, with unparalleled resolution, it raiſed its head out of ruin, grew to a mighty flame from ſcattered embers, and became a prodigy from a ſkeleton; rather attended to furniſh matter for writing than to write, and to deſerve praiſes than to compoſe them. Their drums and trumpets ſpoke for them, and all their ſpeeches were repeated huzzas before battle. They furniſhed the world with ſubject of admiration under Viriatus and Sertorius; they gained glorious victories for Hannibal; they obliged Cæſar, who, till then, everywhere fought for honour, to fight for his life, and they exceeded valour and reſolution itſelf at Numantia. Yet of theſe, and many other of their brave actions, they write nothing, all was recorded by the Romans. Their valour made uſe of foreign pens; they thought it enough for them to act, and for the Latins to write. As long as they knew not how to be hiſtorians, they deſerved them. Artillery was not long ſince invented to take off lives before ſecured by diſtance, to overthrow the ſtrongeſt walls, and to beſtow victories by aim, not by true courage; but preſently after was printing invented in oppoſition to cannon; it is metal againſt

" metal, ink againſt powder, and letters againſt
" bullets. Wet powder takes no effect, there
" is no doubt but it is moiſtened by the ink
" that ſends down orders to provide and diſpoſe
" it. There is no doubt but there is a ſcarcity
" of lead to make bullets, ever ſince it is con-
" ſumed in caſting of letters. But it was bat-
" tles that gave us empire, ſoldiers gained the
" victories, and the victories the rewards, which
" ought always to be beſtowed on thoſe who
" always made us triumph. They who called
" letters and arms ſiſters, knew nothing of their
" pedigree, for no families are leſs of kin than
" ſaying and doing. The ſteel is never joined
" to the quill but to cut it; but the quill, with
" thoſe very wounds it receives from the ſteel,
" revenges itſelf. Moſt contemptible Moriſco,
" it is our deſire that among our adverſaries
" there be many learned, and among us many
" victories, for it is victory over our enemies that
" we covet, and not their practices. The ſe-
" cond thing you propoſe is to receive the laws
" of the Romans, which if once you had com-
" paſſed, you had ruined all. Our whole em-
" pire would run into confuſion between plain-
" tiffs and defendants, and inferior and ſuperior
" judges, and the people would be all taken up
" in the employments of counſellors, ſolicitors,

" attornies, clerks, apparitors, ſergeants, and
" other dependants of courts. Thus, war, which
" now makes choice of men, will be forced to
" take up with the refuſe of embroilers of the
" nation; and there will be more ſuits, not be-
" cauſe there will be more occaſion, but becauſe
" there will be more laws. Following our own
" methods, we enjoy as much peace as we ſtand
" in need of, and as much war as we pleaſe to
" make with our neighbours. The laws in
" themſelves are juſt and good, but where there
" are lawyers they are dull and ſenſeleſs. This
" cannot be denied, ſince the lawyers themſelves
" own it as often as they impoſe what ſenſe
" they pleaſe upon the law, ſuppoſing of itſelf
" it has none. Every judge affirms he is an in-
" terpreter of the law, and, by giving a mean-
" ing to it, ſuppoſes it has none. I, for my
" part, am a renegado, and was a Chriſtian, and
" do avouch, as an eye-witneſs, there is no law,
" either civil or rational, but what has as many
" meanings as there are lawyers, commentators,
" or judges, who give it ſo many, that it proves
" at laſt to have none at all. When, then, there
" is no reaſon to diſpoſſeſs a man of his eſtate,
" there never wants a law, which being either
" ſtrained, or ill interpreted, is ground enough
" for a ſuit, and both the plaintiff and defend-

" ant are in the end ſufferers. Conſider now " what two wholeſome propoſitions have been " made by this thankful Moriſco. The third " thing is, that we ſhould change our ſimitars " for long ſwords. In this particular, as there " is no conſiderable ill conſequence to obſtruct, " ſo I can find no great advantage to encou- " rage us to put it in execution. The half- " moon is our diſtinctive character, and that we " always brandiſh with our ſimitars. To take " up the cuſtoms and faſhions of enemies, is a " ceremony proper to ſlaves, and a garb for " conquered people, or at leaſt it is an omen or " forerunner of both. If we are to be permanent, " let us ſtick to the old proverb, which ſays, " Let that ever be done, which was always " done, for by keeping to it, we ſhall be free " from novelties. Let the Chriſtian thruſt and " the Turk hew, and let this Moriſco, expelled " by the former, be impaled by the latter. As " to the fourth and laſt point, which relates to " the uſe of vineyards and wine, let thirſty ſouls " agree about it with the Alcoran. No ſmall " toleration has been given in this caſe long " ago. But I muſt obſerve, that if there be an " univerſal toleration of wine and taverns, it " will only ſerve to enhance the price of water, " and to make us buy rain by the quart. *My*

“ opinion is therefore, weighing what has been “ propoſed, that this cur is a greater enemy to “ thoſe that harbour, than to thoſe that expelled him.”

All the aſſembly heard this diſcourſe with profound ſilence. The Moriſco looked pitiouſly, a cold ſweat running down his forehead. Then Hali, the prime viſier, who ſtood next to the curtain that was before the grand ſeignior, after conſidering his looks, ſaid, “ Chriſtian ſlaves, “ what ſay you to what you have heard?” They ſeeing the blindneſs of that deluded nation, and perceiving they loved their own barbarity, and placed their ſecurity in tyranny and ignorance, abhorring the light of learning, and the juſtice of laws, cauſed a Spaniſh gentleman, who had been thirty years in ſlavery, to anſwer for them all, which he did in theſe words: “ We Spaniards ſhall not adviſe you to “ any thing that is for your good, becauſe it “ would be a piece of treachery againſt our “ monarch, and an offence againſt our religion; “ neither will we deceive you, becauſe we do “ not ſtand in need of frauds to defend ourſelves againſt you; therefore we Chriſtians “ have reſolved thus ſilently to wait our doom.” The grand ſeignior influenced by the hour, and drawing the curtains before his throne (a thing never before ſeen) with an angry voice, ſaid, "Let theſe Chriſtians be ſet free, their generous "goodneſs ſhall be their ranſom; clothe and "furniſh them plentifully for their voyage out "of the eſtates of the Moriſcoes. And let that "dog be burnt alive for propoſing of innova- "tions, and all that ſhall follow his example "ſhall ſuffer the like pain. It is my choice to "be called barbarous conqueror, rather than be "learned and overthrown. All our knowledge "muſt be to know how to overcome, for an ig- "norant people is the ſafety of a tyrant. I com- "mand all here preſent to forget what they "heard from this Moriſco, the powers of the "ſoul ſhall obey my orders, as well as the cor- "poral ſenſes, therefore let your memories dread "my anger." Thus the hour gave to every one what they deſerved, the barbarous infidels were hardened in their ignorance, the Chriſtians obtained their liberty, and the Moriſco was puniſhed.

A Dutch ſhip, by ſtreſs of weather, was forced into one of the ports of Chili *. The Indians, who guarded that harbour, being a people, who in that conquered world manfully defended their liberty to the damnation of their ſouls in their idolatry, with weapons in their hands attacked

---

* Chili is on the coaſt of America, on the ſouth of Peru.

the ſhip's crew, thinking they were Spaniards, whoſe dominions encloſed them, and from whoſe ſubjection they have ſtill exempted themſelves. The captain pacified them, ſaying, They were Hollanders, and came as ambaſſadors from that commonwealth, with a meſſage of importance to the caciques and chief men. Then ſweetening theſe words with rich wine, brewed after the manner of the north, and mollifying them with butter and other rarities, they were admitted and careſſed. The Indian, who commanded, gave an account to the magiſtrates of the new people that was arrived, and of their intentions. All the principal men, and a great number of people aſſembled with their weapons in their hands. This nation is ſo provident againſt poſſibilities, and ſo jealous of appearances, that they receive ambaſſadors with the ſame precaution, as they meet an enemy's army. The captain of the ſhip came before them, attended by four of his men, and a ſlave ſerving as an interpreter: They aſked of him, Who he was? Whence he came? To what purpoſe? And, from whom? He anſwered not without ſome dread of the warlike audience; "I am a Dutch "captain, and come from Holland, a commonwealth in the weſt, to offer you our friendſhip "and trade. We live in a land which the ſea

" from above looks down upon with indignation, " to ſee it dry below its billows. We were not " long ſince ſubjects, and part of the dominion " of the great monarch of Spain and the new " world, where only your valour has exempted " itſelf from his crown, which, like the ſun, extends its compaſs round the earth. We gained our liberty with immenſe labour, becauſe " the ſeverity of King Philip the Second preferred the bloody execution of two noblemen, " the Counts Horn and Egmont, before the ſovereignty of ſo many provinces. Revenge inflamed our courage, and carrying on a war " which laſted above ſixty years without interruption, we have ſacrificed two millions of " men to thoſe two lives, and made the fields of " the Low Countries an univerſal burial-place " to all Europe. Our ſucceſs has made us abſolute maſters of half thoſe countries; and not " ſo ſatisfied, we have taken many ſtrong holds " in the other provinces, have gained large dominions in the eaſt, and in Brazil, have conquered Pernambuco and Paraiba, enriching " ourſelves with Brazil wood, tobacco and ſugar: " And to conclude, of ſubjects that we were to " the king of Spain, are become his moſt implacable enemies. We have taken it into our " conſideration; that the Spaniards have not on-

" ly ſubdued theſe provinces, but that in few years they have deſtroyed in them many towns, peopling them again with ſtrangers; ſo that there ſcarce remains the memory of the natives in their tombs; and that the mighty emperors, kings, caciques, and other princes, are ſo wholly extinct and buried in oblivion, as if they had never been. We perceive that you alone (either that you are wiſer, or warned by the fate of others) maintain an hereditary liberty, and by your valour the American race is preſerved from ſlavery. It is natural for every creature to love its likeneſs, and ſince you and our commonwealth ſo much reſemble one another, it was decreed to ſend me through ſuch vaſt ſeas, and ſuch dangerous diſtance, to tender you their ſincere amity and friendſhip, and to offer, not only for your defence, but to promote your farther deſigns, to furniſh you with ſhips, cannon, officers and ſoldiers, who are ſuch as are praiſed and admired by all, by whom they are not feared. By way of trade they offer you free commerce in their dominions, with a brotherly and perpetual alliance, deſiring for themſelves, the freedom of your ports, and the ſettlement of a league offenſive and defenſive upon equal terms on both ſides. And the more to expreſs their

“ affection, by their great intereſt, they will ſe-
“ cure you the friendſhip of many kings, prin-
“ ces, and commonwealths, their confederates.”
The Indians returned a courteous anſwer, telling him, That to receive his propoſals it was enough to hear him, but in order to give their anſwer they muſt conſult in council, and the next day at the ſame time would give him their reſolution. It was ſo agreed, and the Dutchman knowing the Indians are naturally inclined to toys and curioſities, the better to gain their affections, he preſented them with barrels of butter, cheeſe, caſks of wine, ſwords, hats, and looking-glaſſes; and laſtly, a teleſcope, highly extolling the uſe of it, ſaying, By the help of it they might ſee ſhips at ten or twelve leagues diſtance, and diſcover by their colours whether they belonged to friends or enemies; that they might do the ſame by land. He added, that with it they might find ſtars in heaven which they had never ſeen before, nor could not be diſcerned without it; that through it they might plainly diſcover the ſpots in the face of the moon, which look like eyes and mouth, and might perceive a black ſpot in the circle of the ſun. That it wrought theſe wonders by drawing, with theſe two glaſſes, cloſe to the eyes, things that were at a vaſt diſtance. The principal man among

the Indians aſked for it, and the Dutchman having opened it to the due diſtance, and inſtructed him how to uſe it, delivered it to him. He clapped his right eye to it, and levelling it towards the mountains, ſet up a cry that teſtified his admiration to the reſt, telling them, he had at four leagues plainly ſeen men, beaſts, and birds, and the rocks and ſhrubs ſo near at hand, that they ſeemed bigger than natural, cloſe to the fartheſt glaſs.

Here the influence of the hour affected them, and they having gabbled in their language ſome diſcourſes in appearance paſſionate, he that took the glaſs, holding it in his left hand, directed his diſcourſe to the Dutchman in theſe words: "An "inſtrument that finds a ſpot in the ſun, proves "the moon a liar, and diſcovers what heaven "hides, is a miſchievous inſtrument, a glaſs "pickthank, and cannot be grateful to heaven. "Its attracting things at a great diſtance, is a "ſufficient cauſe to raiſe a jealouſy in us who "are far removed from you. With this, doubt"leſs, it was you diſcovered us ſo remote, and "through it we have deſcried the deſign you "labour to hide under your ſpecious offers. By "this artifice you pry into the elements, and "thruſt yourſelves into ſovereignty. You, as "you ſay, live dry below the water, and wreſt "your land wrongfully from the ſea. We ſhall "not be ſuch fools to take thoſe for our friends "who could not be good ſubjects, nor ſhall we "truſt them with our habitations, who have "ſtolen theirs from the fiſhes. You were ſubjects of the king of Spain, and having uſurped "his dominion, value yourſelves upon being "rebels, and would have us, through a fond "credulity, become a prey to your treachery. "Neither is it true, that we reſemble you, for "in maintaining that native country which nature gave us, we only defend what is our own; "we preſerve our liberty, but do not ſteal it. "You offer to aſſiſt us againſt the king of Spain, "yet confeſs at the ſame time you have taken "Brazil from him, which was his; if you take "the Indies from him who took them from us, "how much more reaſon have we to be afraid "of you than of him. You muſt obſerve that "America is a rich beautiful harlot, and ſince "ſhe was falſe to her huſbands, ſhe will never "be true to her bullies. Chriſtians ſay, heaven "puniſhed the Indies, becauſe they adored idols; "and we Indians ſay, heaven will puniſh the "Chriſtians, becauſe they adore the Indies. You "think you carry gold and ſilver, and you only "carry well coloured envy and precious miſery. "You take from us, that you may have for

" others to take from you. That which makes " you our enemies, makes you enemies to one " another. Begone, then, within two hours out " of this port, and let us know if you want for " any thing. If you have a mind to gain our " good will, ſince you are ſo good at invention, " invent an inſtrument to remove what is by us " at a great diſtance, for we promiſe you we " will never look upon your country, nor Spain, " with this that attracts things that are far off. " Carry away this glaſs ſpy, this diſcoverer of " the firmament, for we have no need of it, " being able, with the help of our eyes only to " diſcover more in you than we like; and let " me tell you, the ſun is beholden to it for " ſhowing you the black ſpot in his circle, or " elſe for the colour's ſake you would have endeavoured to cut out and ſtamp him into " money."

The blacks aſſembled in mighty numbers to conſult about obtaining their liberty, a thing they have often earneſtly ſolicited. The numerous concourſe being ſeated and ſilent, one of the chiefeſt among them, who in that ſwarthy audience appeared blacker than the reſt, and had propoſed this affair in the court of Rome, ſpoke to this purpoſe: "There is no " cauſe for our ſlavery but our colour, and co-

"lour is an accident, not a crime. Yet certain "it is, thoſe who lord it over us have no colour "for their tyranny but our colour, which is "produced by the preſence and nearneſs of the "greateſt beauty, to wit, the ſun. Flocky "heads and clotted hair, ſquab noſes and blubber "lips, are no better grounds for our captivity. Many whites might be ſlaves if theſe "three things carried it, and it were more reaſonable "they ſhould be ſo who are hideous "with their mighty noſes, like rudders in their "faces, and ſnivel through elephants trunks, "than we who have nothing to loſe by the pox, "and are the very oppoſites to the ſnouts. Why "do not the whites conſider, that if we look "like blots among them, one of them looks like "a ſtain among us? Did they make ſlaves of "the mulattoes, it were more excuſable, for "they are a rabble without a king, a compound "betwixt light and darkneſs, wainſcot faces "compared with white men, foils to the brown, "the next degree to the blacks, and the very "picture of ſoot. In all ages there have been "men of our complexion famous for martial "exploits, learning, virtue, and ſanctity; it is "needleſs for me to repeat a catalogue of them, "for they are ſufficiently known. Nor can it "be denied that we are preferable to the whites,

" for not endeavouring to diſguiſe the colour " nature gave to our ſkins. Among them the " women that are ſwarthy or brown, plaſter " themſelves like walls to become white, and " they that are white, never ſatisfied with white- " neſs, waſh to increaſe it. Only our women " contenting themſelves with their natural com- " plexion, are beautiful in the dark, and the " whiteneſs of their teeth ſhining the brighter " through their blackneſs, when they ſmile they " ſparkle like the ſtars in the night. Neither " do we bely our age, dye our hair, or wear " falſe locks. Why then are we contemned " and chaſtiſed? This is it I offer to your con- " ſideration, that you may conſult what means " may be uſed for obtaining our due liberty " and reſt."

The hour prevailed, and a black, whoſe head through age was become gray, contrary to the received opinion that blacks take no colour, roſe up and ſaid, " Let ambaſſadors be immedi- " ately ſent to all the kingdoms in Europe with " two propoſals; the firſt, That if colour be the " cauſe of ſlavery, they will take notice of the " red beards, for the ſake of Judas, and paſs by " the blacks, on account of the three kings that " came to Bethlehem; and ſince cats and dogs " of that colour are hateful, it will be but rea-

"ſonable there be no men nor women of it; "and let him in our name propoſe means for "the ſpeedy deſtruction of fox heads, with their "appurtenances. The ſecond propoſal is, That "they mix their breed with ours, and blending "their brightneſs with our ſootineſs, produce a "mongrel race, that ſo ſwarthineſs may become "faſhionable; being ſufficiently warned by the "clearneſs of the Germans and Flemings, who "have embroiled and diſtracted the world, ſtain-"ed ſo many fields with blood, and filled ſo "many nations with rebellions and hereſies; "but particularly, let them remember the "Frenchmen's yellow beards. As for our am-"baſſadors, let them take this advice, that if "the people * ſneeze at them, they may take "ſnuff for their comfort, and ſhall anſwer, God "bleſs us; beſtowing the prayer upon them-"ſelves."

The mighty † monarch of England, whoſe iſland is the moſt beautiful mole upon the face of the ocean, having aſſembled his parliament, ſpoke to them as follows: "My dominions are "encompaſſed by the raging ſea, hemmed in

---

* It is a cuſtom in Spain to ſneeze at the blacks by way of contempt.

† This was ſpoken in the perſon of King Charles I. in whoſe time it was written, in the year 1640.

"and defended by the waves; my kingdoms, as to the public worſhip, are of the Reformed religion, but in their hearts they are Catholics. I have engrafted the papal power upon the regal, wear at once the crown and mitre, and have two heads, the ſpiritual and temporal. I ſuſpect, though it is not viſible, a ſpiritual ſchiſm among my ſubjects, and that the city which holds St. Peter's keys, influences the private councils in London. This is of ſo much more dangerous conſequence, by how much it is the more private. It is a great eye-ſore to me to behold the rebellious Hollanders grown up into a commonwealth. I confeſs mine and my anceſtors jealouſy of the greatneſs of Spain, has raiſed them from a contemptible ſpawn, to a bulk that exceeds the Britiſh whale. I ſee them daily encroaching upon the Eaſt and Weſt Indies, and am devoured by the vermine I bred. I know that almoſt every year they have rich fleets from their ſtolen dominions, and ſometimes they ſnap all, or a conſiderable part of thoſe that belong to the king of Spain, which brings them in ineſtimable treaſure. By land ſo many years continual exerciſe has made them ſoldiers, with the reputation of innumerable victories; and their experience in obeying has

“ rendered them fit to command. By ſea their “ ſhips are not to be counted, their fortune is “ matchleſs, their conduct not to be paralleled, “ and their reputation above their neighbours. “ On the other ſide, I ſee my neighbour the “ king of France (whom I hate upon ancient “ grudges) aſpire to the empire of Germany “ and Rome, having already got footing in Italy, “ being poſſeſſed of towns, favoured by ſome “ princes, and in all appearance countenanced “ by the Pope. He is a youth born and grown “ up amidſt arms, and gained triumphs with “ them when he was fitter to have played with “ toys. I now look upon his ſubjects to be “ wholly united, ſince he has demoliſhed all the “ ſtrong holds of the Huguenots, Lutherans, “ and Calviniſts, and veſted the power of the “ government in the Catholics alone; neither “ do I on this account eſteem him the better “ Catholic, but believe him a crafty politician, “ and am perſuaded he is in himſelf a time-“ ſerver; that he only aims at his intereſt, and “ believes in what he would have, not in that “ he adores; a religion many follow under the “ name of another, yet he diſſembles, becauſe “ his deſign being to work himſelf into the poſ-“ ſeſſion of Naples and Milan, he thought it “ convenient to favour the Catholics, as being

“ infinitely the ſtronger party: They are beholden to their number, not to their doctrine. He pretends a Catholic zeal, becauſe it is the beſt colour to diſguiſe his ambition of enlarging his dominions in Italy; and he is as much beholden to his hypocriſy as to his valour for his conqueſts. In Germany, by calling in the Swedes, and ſtirring up the electors of Saxony and Brandenburg, and the Landgrave of Heſſe, he was ſworn *in verba Lutheri.* He laid hold of Calvin's conſcience to ſeize the Duke of Lorrain's dominions; and thus he is a Janus in religion, looking upon the Turk with one face, and upon the Pope with the other; Cardinal Richlieu being made his inſtrument to wind him into that court. This cauſes my noſe to ſwell at him, becauſe I conſider, that for the compaſſing his ends, he has made no account of my power, but has taken up with the fortune of the Hollanders, deſpiſing England, as if he were furniſhed with another wonderful Joan of Arc, or Maid of Orleans. I have ſo ill a reliſh of all theſe actions, that they ſet my teeth on edge, and the very air I breathe is nauſeous; to which, adding the ſucceſs in the Iſle of Rhe, it cauſes a lothing in my memory. It occurs not to me with whom I can

" join in confederacy to clip the wings of theſe " two neighbours, unleſs with Philip IV. king " of Spain, who is a great, rich, and mighty " monarch, being lord of the moſt warlike na- " tions in the world, and in the prime of his " age; yet I cannot but take notice, that my " honour and reputation are engaged in reſto- " ring the Palatine, and I cannot expect it from " the Catholics, and conſequently muſt not hope " it from the Imperialiſts and Spaniards, by rea- " ſon of the difference of religion, and that the " Proteſtants are already ſick of the houſe of Au- " ſtria. Beſides, I gueſs the king of Spain has not " forgot my journey to his court, ſince I have " not forgot my return to my own, the memory " whereof is renewed by the attempt of my " ſhips upon Cadiz. I would willingly reduce " the Moſt Chriſtian King to his former bounds; " for, like a fool, he is ſwollen above his banks, " and has ſpread himſelf over all Europe; and " at the ſame time would pull back the Dutch " to what they were. It is your parts to adviſe " what methods will be moſt proper for this un- " dertaking; but at the ſame time you are to " underſtand, that I am not only reſolved, but " eager to go myſelf in perſon, becauſe I am of " opinion, that a prince who being engaged in " a neceſſary war, does not himſelf lead his peo-

“ ple, rather condemns his ſubjects to carry arms “ than make ſoldiers of them; and they being “ thus drove like criminals, ſuffer more than “ they act; whence it comes they expect their “ liberty, and revenge no leſs by being overcome “ than overcoming. There is as much “ difference betwixt leading and ſending of armies, “ as betwixt jeſt and earneſt, as appears “ by experience. Anſwer in relation to the “ public without meddling with my ſafety; and “ let me hear nothing in your opinions that “ looks like ſelf-intereſt. Inform my underſtanding, “ do not perplex it.” This ſaid, they all looked upon one another with an awful ſilence, and after conſulting together in private, the ſpeaker returned this anſwer: “ Your Majeſty, “ great Sir, has contrived ſo to place your “ queſtion, that you have taught us how to anſwer; “ an art highly to be valued by kings, “ becauſe it creates *perſpicuity and* a good underſtanding. “ Truth is but one, it is plain and “ clear, few words expreſs it, multiplicity confounds “ it, it breaks little ſilence, falſhood “ leaves none unbroken. The reflections you “ have made on the king of France and the “ Hollanders are worthy your royal conſideration. “ The imminent danger requires a manly “ and ſpeedy reſolution. The king of Spain is

" at this time the only confederate can promote " your deſigns, and will be the more effectual " if you join with him in perſon to cruſh theſe " two troubleſome neighbours. And your Ma- " jeſty may obſerve there is as great diſtance be- " twixt acting and commanding, as is betwixt " words and deeds. I confeſs your heirs are too " tender to be forſaken; but it is a leſs evil to " leave them young, than childiſhly to bear " them company, being a father." Scarce had he uttered theſe words, when an old decrepid ſenator, whoſe griſle-clotted beard covered all his breaſts, his head hanging down, and the hunch of his back, through age, riſing above it, lifting himſelf up by the help of his ſtaff, ſaid, " There is no doubt but it is a great raſhneſs to " adviſe his Majeſty to go abroad in perſon, " when his kingdoms ſwarm with concealed " Catholics, whoſe number is known to be " great, but ſuſpected to be much greater. Your " Majeſty has ſubjects fit to be intruſted with " ſuch an undertaking; let an army of our own " religion be ſent under the command of the " chief men who are ſuſpected to be Catholics; " thus their allegiance will be ſecured abroad, " and fewer enemies will remain at home. Do " not venture your perſon, in which we venture " our all, and which alone ſecures all; for, from

“ the ſpeaker's opinion, I gather, he plots like a “ Papiſt, and does not adviſe like a counſellor.”

The whole aſſembly fell into confuſion, and in this diſorder the hour began, and the king changing colour, ſaid, “ You two, inſtead of “ adviſing, have diſtracted me. One ſays, If “ I go not abroad in perſon, my enemies will “ deprive me of my kingdom; the other, If I go, “ it will be taken away by my ſubjects; ſo that “ you will have me ſtand more in awe of my “ ſubjects than of my enemies. The condition “ I am reduced to is deplorable. It remains “ that every one of you, within twenty-four “ hours, lay before me by whoſe and by what “ means I am reduced to this paſs, naming perſons and cauſes, without ſparing one another, “ otherwiſe I ſhall ſuſpect you all, for the blame “ lies only among you that adviſe me; for I am “ now reſolved to attend my affairs both at “ home and abroad. The king of France goes “ abroad without having iſſue, or the hopes of “ it, and leaves a kingdom divided on ſeveral “ accounts; the nobility ſtained with the blood “ of Montmorency; the Huguenots ſuppreſſed, “ but not without thoughts of revenge; the “ country eaten up with taxes, and the whole “ kingdom groaning under the oppreſſion of “ the prime miniſter; and you would have me,

" who have iſſue, and leſs obſtacles to obſtruct " me, ſtay to rock and play with my children. " France and Holland are become formidable, " becauſe I have lived at home at my eaſe; if " I appear not abroad they will be my ruin. If " I ſtay for fear of my ſubjects, I encourage " them to contemn me. If once my enemies " are aſſured I cannot go abroad, I ſhall not be " able to ſecure myſelf againſt them; and if I " go abroad and periſh, at leaſt I ſhall gain the " honour of the attempt, and prevent the ſcan- " dal of cowardice. That king who acts not " himſelf in defence of his crown, furniſhes " them with an excuſe who do not aſſiſt him. " It will be unjuſt to puniſh thoſe that follow " his example, for he cannot be judge of the " crime he taught, nor condemn what was " learned of him by thoſe who imitate him in " forſaking the defence of their country. Be- " gone all of you immediately, and conſult, ac- " cording to your duty, what is beſt for my ſer- " vice, preferring it before your lives, and my " quiet; for I promiſe the more ſharp the truth " you deliver ſhall be, the better I will look " upon it; and do not perplex me with the pre- " tence of carrying all the nobility along with " me, for experience demonſtrates, that no man

" ever aſſembled them in an army, but he loſt " them and himſelf. The rings meaſured by " the buſhel at Cannas, teſtify it to the unſpeakable ſorrow of Rome. So the wood of Pavia " made the ſepulchre of all the French nobility, " and of their king's liberty. So the Spaniſh " Armada, under the Duke of Medina Sidonia, " which, coming to invade this kingdom, enriched the ſhores with its wreck. And ſo " King Sebaſtian, who loſt his nobility, his " crown, and his life in Africk. The nobility " united, cauſes confuſion, and occaſions ruin, " becauſe they know not how to command, " and will not obey, and conſequently their " pride breaks all military diſcipline. I will " take with me a few that have gained experience, the reſt ſhall ſtay to be a check to the " licentiouſneſs of the multitude, and a curb to " mutineers. I have occaſion for ſuch men as " think they cheat me in expoſing their lives " for ſixpence a-day, not for thoſe, who, having " exhauſted my treaſure that they might go, " claim a title to my revenue becauſe they " went. It were good that all the nobility " were trained, yet it were not ſafe. Private " perſons muſt not arm madmen, or kings the " nobility. Take this along with you by way "of inſtruction, and there will be the leſs to di-"ſtract your conſultations, and my reſolution "will the ſooner take effect."

At Theſſalonica, a city of Macedonia, ſeated at the bottom of the gulf to which it gives its name, and is ſubject to the emperor of Conſtantinople, by the appointment of Rabbi Saadias, Rabbi Racabarbaniel, Rabbi Salomon, and Rabbi Niſin, was held a general aſſembly of the deputies of all the Jews in Europe. Thither reſorted for the ſynagogue at Venice, Rabbi Samuel and Rabbi Maimon; for that of Ragguſa, Rabbi Abenezra; for that of Conſtantinople, Rabbi Jacob; for that of Rome, Rabbi Chaminiel; for that of Leghorn, Rabbi Cerſonni; for that of Roan, Rabbi Gavirol; for that of Prague, Rabbi Moſche; for that of Vienna, Rabbi Berchai; for that of Amſterdam, Rabbi Mier Armaac; for that of Oran, Rabbi Aſepha; for the Jews in maſquerade, who trade under the diſguiſe of the Chriſtian habit and language, Rabbi David Bar Nachman: With theſe joined the Monopanti, a republican people inhabiting certain iſlands, who lying in the Black Sea, betwixt Muſcovy and Tartary, are politicly maintained againſt their fierce neighbours, rather by cunning than by force of arms, or ſtrength of fortifications. The natives are men of inextricable ſubtilty, thorough-paced in hypocriſy, abſolute maſters of diſſimulation, and of ſo deceitful a preſence, that all religions and nations take them for their own. Trade gives them multiplicity of faces, and changes their countenances, and intereſt ſhifts their ſouls. They are governed by a prince called Pragas Chincollos. By his order there came to this ſanhedrim, ſix of the moſt learned men in the doctrine of raking and griping; the firſt was called Philorgiros, the ſecond Eriſtotheos, the third Danipe, the fourth Arpi Trotono, the fifth Pacaſmazo, and the ſixth Daper Bazalas. The aſſembly ſeated themſelves orderly, according to the pre-eminence of each ſynagogue, giving the firſt ſeat to the Monopanti, in courteſy as they were ſtrangers. After ſilence was made, Rabbi Saadias, having repeated the pſalm, "In "exitu Iſrael de Egypto," made the following ſpeech: "We, the firſt generation of the world, "who are become the off-caſt of all ages, and "diſperſed multitude, living in captivity and "miſerable contempt, perceiving the whole "world entangled in the ſnares of diſcord, have "aſſembled ourſelves together to conſult our "intereſt amidſt the preſent tumults, that we "may raiſe ourſelves upon the ruins of all others. "I confeſs captivity, plagues, and obſtinacy, are

" our inheritance. Fears and jealouſies are the " firſt begotten of our underſtandings, and we " were ever malecontents againſt God, ſtill va- " luing the deity we made, before that which " made us. From the firſt beginning his go- " vernment was irkſome to us, and we followed " the interpretation of the devil, in oppoſition " to his law. When his omnipotency governed " us, we rebelled; when he gave us governors, " we diſobeyed. Samuel, who governed in his " name, was thought burdenſome, and we ga- " thering an ungrateful aſſembly, though God " was our king, aſked of God another king. " He gave us Saul, and him a tyrannical right " over us; declaring he would make ſlaves of " our children, and take away our eſtates to " give to his ſervants; and he aggravated this " puniſhment, ſaying, He would not take him " from us, though we ſhould beg it of him. " He ſaid to Samuel, that it was him they de- " ſpiſed, not the prophet, or his ſons. To fulfil " his curſe, that Saul continues among us at all " times, in all places, and under ſeveral names. " Since, then, he oppreſſes us with infamous and " miſerable thraldom in all kingdoms and com- " monwealths, and God permits every king " ſhould be a Saul to us, who left God for " Saul. Our nation remained criminal in the

" ſight of all men, all caſt it from themſelves; " all retain, and all are aſhamed of retaining it. " We reſide not in any place, but whither we " came, expelled from another, we may be compelled to return. We reſt no where, but " where they are deſirous to caſt us out, and all " dread we ſhould be drove upon them. We " cannot but own there is no congruity between " our words and actions, and that our mouth " and our heart never were united in adoring " the ſame God; our mouth always called upon the God of heaven, our heart ever gave " idolatrous adoration to gold and uſury. Being " under the conduct of Moſes, when he went " up to the mount for the law, we made it " appear, that the religion of our ſouls was " gold, and any creature framed thereof. There " we adored our own jewels in the calf, and " our avarice took for its deity the reſemblance " of the ſucking cattle. We admit not of God " in any other metal, and in this we receive any " inſect for a god. He well underſtood the " diſeaſe that cauſed our inſatiable thirſt, who " made us drink up our idol reduced to powder. " A mighty vengeance followed this crime, yet " though it ſlew many thouſands, it was a warning to few, for whereas God afterwards did " for us all that we could aſk, ſtill he did no-

" thing but what we grew weary of. He ſtretched out the clouds like a canopy, to cover us
" in the deſert from the ſcorching heat of the
" day. He ſtrengthened with the fiery pillar
" the weak light of the moon and ſtars, that
" they, aſſiſted with its gliſtering motion, might
" overcome the darkneſs of the night, and repreſent the ſun in its abſence. He commanded the wind to ſhower down our harveſt, and diſpoſe the regions of the air into
" wonderful barns, pouring thence our ſuſtenance ready dreſſed in the manna, with all
" the ſeaſoning every palate could deſire. He
" cauſed the quails, deſcending like rain, to become game and nets for our entertainment.
" He diſſolved the immoveable rocks into running ſtreams, and cauſed ſprings to guſh from
" the ſtones to quench our thirſt; he dried up
" the bottom of the ſea into an eaſy road for
" our feet, and raiſed the waters perpendicular,
" heaping up their ſmoothneſs into liquid walls,
" detaining in a ſecure ſtructure the waves and
" billows, which became a ſtraight way for our
" forefathers, and a ſepulchre to Pharaoh and
" his army. His word raiſed vermine, and liſted
" frogs, flies, and locuſts, in his army for our
" ſervice. There is nothing ſo weak, whereof
" God does not make up invincible hoſts againſt

" tyrants. With ſuch ſmall ſoldiers he vanquiſhed the formidable enemy's ſquadrons, " glittering in their ſteel armour, vain-glorious " in the bearings of their ſhields, and flouriſhing " in the feathers of their creſts. Theſe wonder-" ful mercies, which our king and prophet Da-" vid celebrated in the 10th Pſalm, which be-" gins Horula Adonai, were requited by our " obſtinacy and ingratitude with a loathing and " diſlike of our food, and with oblivion of the " way opened through the waves of the ſea. " Many times God chaſtiſes with what he gives, " and rewards with what he refuſes. Such " forefathers are a ſcandalous genealogy of our " perverſeneſs. We are generally looked upon " as obſtinate in endleſs hopes, whereas in reali-" ty we are the moſt deſperate people in nature: " We are the *ne plus ultra* of incredulity, and " hopes and incredulity are incompatible. Nei-" ther do we hope, nor is any thing to be hoped " of us. Becauſe Moſes ſtayed a little on the " mount we deſpaired of him, and aſked a God " of Aaron. The reaſon why it is ſaid we are " obſtinate in everlaſting hope, is, becauſe we " have ſo many ages expected the Meſſiah; but " neither did we receive him in Chriſt, nor do " we expect him in any other. The cauſe of " our ſaying always that he is to come, is not

" that we deſire him, or believe it, but by theſe " delays to diſguiſe our being the fool that begins the 13th Pſalm, ſaying in his heart, " There is no God. The ſame, ſays he, who " denies him that came, and waits for him that " is not to come. This is the language of our " heart, and, rightly conſidered, it is the quære " of the 2d Pſalm, ' Fremuerunt gentes, et po- " puli meditati ſunt inania adverſus Dominum, " et adverſus Chriſtum ejus.' So that we ſay " we always hope, to conceal our always deſpair- " ing. Of the law of Moſes we retain only the " name, giving it to the exceptions the Talmu- " diſts have forged to belie the ſcripture, diſ- " guiſe the prophecies, invalidate the precepts, " and diſpoſe conſciences to worldly ends, in- " ſtructing our atheiſtical inclinations with ſedi- " tious politics for the conveniency of a civil " life, and adopting us of ſons of Iſrael, ſons of " Mammon. When we had a law we kept it " not. Now we keep it, it is no law, farther " than in the very ſound of the three letters. " It was neceſſary to declare what we were, to " excuſe what we are, and promote what we " aim to be, advancing ourſelves upon the wild " extravagances, which, like a frenzy, poſſeſs " all the earth; for now not only the Heretics " riſe in arms againſt their enemies the Catholics,

" but the Catholics themſelves, in hoſtile manner, invade one another. The Proteſtants of " Germany for many years paſt have ſtruggled " for a heritic emperor, and in this they are favoured by the Moſt Chriſtian King, who acts " as if he were not ſo, and connives at Calvin " and Luther. The Catholic King oppoſes them " all, to keep in the houſe of Auſtria the ſupreme dignity of the Roman eagles. The " Hollanders, encouraged by being ſucceſsful " traitors, aſpire to raiſe their treaſon into a " monarchy; and of rebellious ſubjects to the " king of Spain, dare preſume to become his " competitors. They wreſted from him what " he had in them, and they proceed to rob him " of what is ſo far from them, as Brazil and India, deſigning to extend their conqueſt over " his crown. We have been no ſmall inſtruments in promoting theſe uſurpations, by " means of the ſham Chriſtians, whom, under " diſguiſe of the Portugueſe language, we have " applied to undermine him, upon pretence of " being his ſubjects. All or moſt of the princes " of Italy have harboured the French in their " dominions, pretending they read the Pope's " inclinations in his looks, and interpreting his " ſilent toleration for a poſitive command. *Ex*

" *motu proprio.* * The king of France has " practiſed an unheard of ſtratagem againſt the " monarch of Spain, diſcharging upon him all " his family, under the title of malecontents, " that he might conſume the pay of his army " in penſions and preſents. When was it ever " known that a king made ammunition of his " mother and brother's teeth againſt another, " that they might eat him up by morſels? It is " a beggarly invention, and yet moſt pernicious. " To wage war by mumping, looks more like " jeſt than earneſt. We have ſynagogues in " the dominions of all theſe princes, where we " are the principal element in compoſing of this " confuſion. At Roan we are the purſe of " France againſt Spain, and of Spain againſt " France. In Spain, diſguiſing our circumciſion " by our habit, we ſupply that monarch with " the ſtock we have at Amſterdam amidſt his " enemies, who make a greater advantage by " ordering us to delay the payment of the bills, " than he does by receiving them. This is in" deed an extraordinary riddle, to wit, to ſerve " and ruin friends and enemies with the ſame

---

* The Duke of Orleans and queen mother of France, upon diſguſt went into Flanders, where they had penſions from the king of Spain, who entertained them to breed diviſions in France.

" money, and to cauſe him that pays it to make " his advantage over him that receives it. The " ſame we do in Germany, Italy, and Conſtanti-" nople, and we have knit this indiſſoluble knot " by placing the ſupply every one expects in " the hands of his greateſt enemy. For we " furniſh money, as he that lends upon intereſt " to one that plays and loſes that he may loſe " the more. I do not deny but the Monopanti " are the boxkeepers of Europe, who furniſh " cards, dice, and candles, and at length the " box runs away with all the gold and ſilver, " leaving the gameſters nothing but noiſe, thirſt, " and a deſire of revenge, which they encou-" rage, that their gaming-houſe, which is the " end of all men, may never have an end. " Thus far they are the true copies of our ori-" ginal. True it is they have much the advan-" tage of us in the manner of worming them-" ſelves in, becauſe they are the Jews of the " New Teſtament, as we are of the Old; for as " we did not believe that Jeſus was the Meſſiah " that came, ſo they, believing that Jeſus was " the Meſſiah already come, they let him ſlip " through their conſciences in ſuch a manner, " it ſeems he never came to or for them. The " Monopanti believe him, as a grave author ſays " we expect him. *Auream, et Gemmatam Hieru-*

"*ſalem expectabant*, a Jeruſalem of gold and
" precious ſtones. Both we and they, through
" different principles and unlike means, tend to
" the ſame end, which is to deſtroy Chriſtianity,
" which we would not receive, and they, after
" receiving, have rejected. And this is the reaſon
" we have met to join a confederacy of malice
" and deceit. This ſynagogue has taken it
" into conſideration, that gold and ſilver are the
" true ſons of the earth which make war againſt
" heaven, not only with an hundred hands, but
" with as many as dig, caſt, coin, gather, tell,
" receive, and ſteal them. They are two ſubterranean
" demons, yet beloved of all mortals.
" Two ſuch metals, that the greater body they
" have, they have alſo the more ſpirit. No
" eſtate or condition deſpiſes them, and if any
" law condemn, the lawyers and interpreters of
" it bring them off. He that thinks it an undervaluing
" to dig them, values himſelf upon
" gathering them. He who is too great to aſk
" of him who keeps, courteouſly receives them
" of him that offers. And he who thinks it too
" great a labour to earn them, eſteems it an art
" to ſteal them. He that ſays, I will not have
" them, at the ſame time means, give me them.
" And he who cries, I receive nothing, ſpeaks
" truth, becauſe he ſnatches all. As it were a

" falſehood, ſhould the ſea pretend it does not " ſwallow up the ſprings and brooks, ſince " drinking up the rivers which ſuck them up, it " alſo licks up brooks and ſprings; ſo great men " prevaricate, when they ſay they do not receive " from the poor and beggars, whereas they de- " vour the rich, who ſwallow up the poor and " beggars. The premiſes being granted, it will " be moſt proper to level the ſtrokes of our in- " tereſt at kings, commonwealths, and prime " miniſters, in whoſe ſtomachs all the reſt cauſe " a ſurfeit, which being by us ſtirred up, will " prove a lethargy, or apoplexy in their heads. " Let the Monopanti have the pre-eminence of " giving their opinion firſt, what method they " judge moſt proper for our advantage."

They having buzzed about their ſly thoughts from one to another, agreed that Pacaſmazo, as the moſt fluent of tongue, and abounding in words, ſhould ſpeak for them all, which he did in this manner: " The goods of the world be- " long to the induſtrious, and fortune follows " the diſſemblers and the bold. Crowns and " ſceptres are ſooner uſurped and ſnatched, than " inherited or obſerved. He who in temporal " preferments is the worſt among the wicked, is " moſt deſerving without exception, and grows " till he ſuffers himſelf to be outdone in vil-

"lany, for in all ambitious attempts, juſtice and "honeſty make tyrants criminals. No ſooner "theſe begin to uſe moderation, but they depoſe themſelves. If they will continue their "tyranny, they muſt not ſuffer any ſigns to appear abroad that may prove them ſo. The "fire that burns a houſe, caſting out the ſmoke, "calls people to quench it with water. Let "every one take as much of this diſcourſe to "himſelf as ſuits with his purpoſe. Money is "the true Circe which changes into ſundry "forms all that come near or fall in love with "it. We ourſelves are the example. Money "is a diſguiſed deity, which in no place has any "public altar, but is privately adored in all parts. "It has no particular temple, becauſe it ſlides "into all churches. Riches is an univerſal ſect, "in which moſt ſouls agree; and covetouſneſs "is an arch heretic beloved by all politicians, "and the reconciler of all differences in opinion "and humour. We, therefore, perceiving he is "the moſt wonderful magician and necromancer, have choſen him for our North Star, and "make him our loadſtone and point to that pole, "that he may not ſtray from our courſe. This "we perform ſo artificially, that we leave him "to the end we may have him, and deſpiſe him "that we may gather him. This we learn of

" the deceitful pump, which, by being empty, " fills itſelf with what it has not; attracts what " others have, and eaſily ſucks and drains the " full with its own emptineſs. We are the very " reſemblance of gunpowder, which being ſmall, " black, and cloſe rammed, gathers vaſt ſtrength " and ſwiftneſs from its cloſe impriſonment. We " do the miſchief before the noiſe can be heard; " and as we open one eye and ſhut the other, " to take aim, we carry all before us in the " twinkling of an eye. Our houſes are like the " barrels of guns, they are diſcharged at the " keys, and charged at the mouth. Yet though " we are ſuch, we have countenances and manners that ſuit with all men, and therefore we " ſeem not ſtrangers to any ſect or nation. The " Turks takes our hair for a turban, the Chriſtian for a hat, the Moor for a cap, and you " for a veil. We admit not of the name of a " kingdom, commonwealth, or any other, but " only that of Monopanti. We yield all titles " to kings and commonwealths, we take from " them the power abſtracted from the vanity of " thoſe noiſy words. We lay our deſign that " they may be lords over the world, and we over " them. To attain ſo glorious an end, we have " not found any to join with in confederacy on " equal terms, like you, who are at preſent the

" ſharpers of Europe; you only want our quality to complete the ſubverting of all, which " we offer you entire, by way of contagion or " infection, to be tranſmitted by means of an " infernal device found out againſt Chriſtians " by us here preſent; which is, that as treacle " is prepared with the ſharp poiſon of the viper, " becauſe it is the moiſture that goes the quickeſt and moſt directly to the heart; for which " reaſon being compounded with many ſimples " of efficacious virtue, it conveys them to the " heart to defend it againſt poiſon, which is the " deſign of the medicine; ſo we have invented " a counter treacle to convey poiſons to the " heart, by falling upon the virtues and good " works that go to it, and to carry to the ſoul " the vices, abominations, and errors, which on " theſe vehicles will ſlip into it. If you reſolve " upon this alliance, we will give you the receipt, with the weight and number of ingredients, and furniſh apothecaries well verſed in " the compoſition; in the contriving whereof, " Danipe, Alkemiaſtos, and I, have taken great " pains, and our labour is nothing inferior to " the Trochiſks of the viper. Be ruled by our " Pragus, for you need not ceaſe to be Jews, " and at the ſame time will learn to be Monopanti."

At the very uttering of theſe words, the hour had its effect, and Rabbi Maimon, one of thoſe that came from the ſynagogue of Venice, riſing up, and putting aſide with his hand a fathom and a half of ſnout, that he might come the cloſer to the ear of Rabbi Saadias, whiſpered theſe words: "Rabbi, I ſmell a rat in that "word, be governed, we muſt keep a ſharp eye "upon theſe fellows, for to me they look like "family Pharaohs and ſubtle encroachers." Saadias replied, "Now at length I am con"vinced they are the very manna of inſtruction, "for they taſte as every one would have them. "The beſt way is to ſay little, and give them a "bait in the trap as to republican mice." Chriſtopheus ſeeing the mumbling dialogue, ſaid to Philargiros and Danipe; "I ſmoke the jealouſy "of the wicked Jews: Let every man of the "Monopanti give himſelf a lick of the golden "calf, and they will all fall upon their knees." They all ran upon ſnares and contrivances againſt one another, and Rabbi Saadias, to amuſe the Monopanti, ſaid, "We look upon you "as diſcoverers of the land of promiſe, and the "true baſis of our deſigns, that we may be "united in a miſchievous body, it will be re"quiſite we conſult the methods, and conclude "and ſign articles at our next meeting, which "we appoint three days hence." Pacaſmazo covering his ſnakes ſkin with doves feathers, ſaid, "The time was ſufficient, and the reſolu-"tion diſcreet; but that it was requiſite, exact "ſecreſy ſhould be obſerved." Then taking out a book bound in ſheeps-ſkin with the wool on, which was curiouſly interwoven and wrought with gold thread, he gave it to Saadias, ſaying, "This jewel we give you as a pledge." He took it, and aſked, "Whoſe works are theſe?" Pacaſmazo anſwered, "The works of our words. "The author is Nicholas Machiavel, who com-"poſed the thorough baſs to our treble." The Jews attentively looking upon them, and particularly obſerving the binding in ſheeps-ſkin; Rabbi Aſapha, who was deputy for Oran, ſaid, "This is ſome of the wool the Spaniards tell us "in their proverb, which ſays, They that go to "fetch it, are fleeced before they return." Thus they parted, both parties contriving to meet again like the ſteel and flint for to batter, bruiſe, and beat one another to pieces, till they ſtruck fire againſt all the world, for founding the new ſect of Monetiſm, changing the name of Atheiſts into that of Money-mongers, or Monetiſts.

The ſubjects of princes, commonwealths, kings and emperors aſſembled together at Liege, a neuter country, to conſult about their affairs, redreſs their grievances, vent their ſpleen and breathe out their thoughts, before ſtifled under the fear of ſovereign power. There were people of all nations, conditions and qualities. The number was ſo great, it looked more like an army than an aſſembly, for which reaſon they made choice of the open fields to meet in. On the one hand it was ſurpriſing to behold the wonderful variety of garbs and countenances; on the other the ears were confounded, and attention itſelf deceived by the ſtrange diverſity of languages. The voices ſeemed to rend the air, and reſounded in the ſame manner, as when in the heat of harveſt time, the fields ring with the indefatigable noiſe of graſhoppers. The moſt piercing cry was that raiſed by the women, tearing their throats with actions altogether diſtracted. All was full of tumultuous madneſs and raging diſcord. The republicans would be governed by princes, and the ſubjects of princes were for erecting themſelves into commonwealths. This controverſy ſet a noble Savoyard and a commoner of Genoa together by the ears. The Savoyard complained, " That his " duke was the perpetual motion, and conſumed " his ſubjects with continual wars, to bear up his " dominions, which are ever ready to ſink be- " twixt France and Spain. That this ſafety "conſiſted in embroiling the two kings at the "expence of his ſubjects; to the end, that they "two being employed againſt one another, nei- "ther of them might ſwallow him, ſince both "thoſe princes alternatively, firſt one and then "the other conquer and defend him; all which "the ſubjects pay for, being never allowed any "reſpite to breathe. When France attacks, Spain "ſupports him; and when Spain invades, France "defends him; and whereas, neither protects "him for his ſake, but to obſtruct the other's "enlarging his dominion by that acceſſion, and "becoming a nearer and more formidable neigh- "bour; the defence is often as fatal, if not "more to the ſubjects, than the invaſion. The "duke retains a ſecret ambition to be thought "the founder of the liberty of Italy; bearing it "before him, the better to draw to his party "the ſee of Rome. The duke is diſeaſed of the "diſtemper of King Cyrus, is perplexed with "the remembrance of having been lord of Ge- "neva, and grows ſick with the deſire of being "ſupreme among the Italian princes. All theſe "motives are ſpurs to his ambition, which needs "a curb; and for theſe reaſons, I come to pro- "poſe, that Savoy and Piedmont may be form- "ed into a commonwealth where juſtice and "wiſdom govern, and liberty reigns." What liberty reigns? Quoth the Genoeſe, damning himſelf to the pit of hell, "Thou art certainly "mad, and having never lived in a common-"wealth, doſt not know the miſery and ſlavery "that attends it. All the politics in the world, "will never make us ſet our horſes together. I "who am a Genoeſe, born under that common-"wealth, which by its nearneſs, and the great "contentions betwixt us, is well acquainted with "you, and come to perſuade your duke, with "the aſſiſtance of us the commons, to make "himſelf king of Genoa; and if he accepts not "of it, I will go make the ſame offer to the "king of Spain; and from him to the king of "France, and ſo from one to another, till I find "one that will take pity on us. Tell me, thou "ungrateful wretch, to the goodneſs of God to-"wards you, in making you the ſubject of a "prince: Have you ever conſidered how much "eaſier it is to obey one, than many met toge-"ther in one room, but as divided in manners, "inclinations, opinions, and deſigns. Doſt not "thou obſerve, monſter, that in commonwealths, "the government being annual and ſucceſſive "through ſeveral families, it is conſequently "under an awe, and juſtice is not freely diſtri-"buted, for fear leſt thoſe who ſhall govern the "next twelve months or three, ſhould revenge

" themſelves on him that governed before? If " a republican ſenate conſiſt of many, it is all " confuſion; if of few, it only ſerves to corrupt " the ſecurity and excellency of unity. Nor is " this remedied by the duke, who either has no " abſolute power, or laſts but for a time appoint- " ed. If the government be equally divided " betwixt the nobility and commons, they make " up an aſſembly of dogs and cats; for the one " propoſes ſnapping and barking, and the other " anſwers, ſcratching and clawing. If they be " rich and poor, the rich contemn the poor, and " the poor envy the rich. Conſider now what " will be the iſſue of envy and contempt. If " the power reſt in the commons, neither will " the nobles be able to endure them, nor they " to bear not being ſuch. Now, if only the " nobility rules, I can compare the ſubjects to " nothing but the damned in hell, and ſuch are " we the commons of Genoa: Nay, could I ſay " worſe of our condition, I ſhould think this too " little. Genoa has as many commonwealths as " nobles, and as many ſlaves as commons; and " all theſe commonwealths meet in one palace, " only to reckon up our ſtock, that they may " ſqueeze us either by enhancing or abaſing the " value of money; and as if they were inform- " ers againſt our eſtates, their continual ſtudy is

" to depreſs us into poverty. They make uſe " of us like ſponges, ſending us abroad into the " world, that plunging in trade, we may ſuck " riches, and when they perceive us ſwollen " with caſh, they ſqueeze us out for their own " uſe. Tell me then, thou curſed abominable " Savoyard, what it is you aim at by your trea" chery, what can be your infernal deſign? Do " not you perceive that the nobility and com" monalty tranſmit their power to kings and " princes, in whom being removed from the " pride of the former, and lowneſs of the latter, " it compoſes a ſupreme head, authoriſed by a " peaceful and diſintereſted majeſty, over which " the nobility dares not inſult, and under which " the commonalty does not groan."

They had fallen foul of one another, had they not been prevented by the muttering of a drove of legiſlators, driven by a rabble of women, who, with open mouths, confounded them, ſhrieking, and threatening to fall on with their teeth: One of them of ſuch tranſcendant beauty, that it was increaſed by the hideouſneſs of paſſion, which is an affection that adds deformity even to the fierceneſs of lions, delivered herſelf in theſe words: " Tyrants, for what reaſon have " you alone made laws againſt women without " their conſent, according to your own fancies,

" whereas they are an equal part of the two " wherein human government conſiſts. You " exclude us the ſchools merely through envy, " becauſe we ſhall exceed you; and deny us the " uſe of arms, for fear you ſhould be conquered " by our anger, as you are already by our ſmiles. " You have conſtituted yourſelves the ſupreme " judges of peace and war, and we ſuffer your " extravagancies. Adultery in us is a crime " puniſhable with death, and among you it is a " mere jeſt. You will have us be good, that " you may be wicked, and require us chaſte, " that you may be lewd. We have not a ſenſe " but what you keep under hatches; you tie up " our feet, and hoodwink our eyes. If we look, " you ſay we are impudent; if others look on " us we are dangerous. And thus, under co- " lour of modeſty, you condemn us to forfeit " our reaſon and ſenſes. It is your jealouſy, " you ſcoundrels, not our own weakneſs, that " often perſuades us to act that againſt you, for " which you are moſt watchful over us. More " are made wicked by you than would be ſo of " themſelves. If you, ſenſeleſs raſcals, make " yourſelves the forbidden fruit to us, it follows " of neceſſity, we ſhall all become ſo many Eves " againſt you. Very many are good when they " are put into your hands, and you force them

" to be wicked; and you receive none ſo wicked, " but moſt of you oblige them to be worſe. All " your gravity conſiſts in the wild hairineſs of " your faces; and he who thinks his beard will " make the biggeſt bruſh, thinks himſelf the " ableſt man; as if the ſtrength of the brain " lay in long briſtles, which rather look like a " tail than a head. This is the day theſe griev- " ances muſt be redreſſed, either by allowing us " a ſhare in learning and government, or by " giving us a hearing, and doing us right againſt " the laws eſtabliſhed, enacting ſome more fa- " vourable for us, and repealing others that are " prejudicial to us."

A doctor, whoſe beard hung down in dag- locks, ſeeing the women in a crowd, and bent upon miſchief, relying on his eloquence, attempted to appeaſe them with theſe words: " It " is not without much dread I undertake to op- " poſe your ſentiments, conſidering reaſon itſelf " is oft overcome by beauty, and rhetoric is of " no force, compared with your charms. How- " ever, tell me what law you can be intruſted " with, ſince the firſt woman proved herſelf " ſuch, by breaking the law of God? With " what ſafety can weapons be put into your " hands, ſince, with an apple, you ſtruck to the " ground all the generation of Adam, not ſo

" much as thoſe that were hid in the diſtance " of futurity eſcaping? You ſay all laws are " againſt you; this were truth, had you ſaid you " were againſt all laws. What power is there " to compare to yours, though you do not judge " according to the laws by means of the judges " corrupting them. If we make laws, it is you " that break them. If judges govern the world, " and women the judges, it is the women that " govern the world, and debauch them that govern it; for the women they love are more " prevalent with many than the laws they read. " What the devil ſaid to the woman took place " with Adam, of what God ſaid to him. The " influence of the devil is great over human " hearts, if he ſpeaks through the mouth of one " of you. Woman is a rarity that ought to be " feared and loved, and it is very hard to fear " and love the ſame thing. He who loves only " her, hates himſelf; and he who hates only " her, hates nature. What law is there which " your tears will not blot out, and equity is of " force againſt your ſmiles? If we have em" ployments and preferments, it is you that " ſpend the profits in your dreſſes. You have " but one precedent to quote, which is your " beauty; when did you ever urge it that it " did not take place? Or, whoſoever ſaw it that

" did not ſubmit? If we ſuffer ourſelves to be
" bribed, it is that we bribe you. If we ſtrain
" the laws, and incline juſtice, it is for the moſt
" part becauſe we adviſe with your charms;
" you run away with the prize of the villanies
" you command us to act, and we are left with
" ſcandal of corrupt judges. You envy us our
" military employments, whereas you are beholden
" to war for the happineſs of being left
" widows, and we for being buried in oblivion
" among the dead. You complain that adultery
" is a capital crime in you and not in us;
" why, you charming white devils, if one ſlip of
" yours diſhonours parents and children, and
" ſtains a whole generation, how can you fancy
" death too ſevere a puniſhment? Whereas the
" honour of many innocent perſons is infinitely
" valuable above the life of a criminal. But let
" us judge by your works how you value the
" penalty. You cannot count the adulteries
" you are guilty of, becauſe they are innumerable;
" and among us they are ſo rare, we
" have nothing to count. Death is a puniſhment
" that deters others from falling into the
" ſame crime; but where does this appear by
" you? To complain of our guarding you, is to
" complain that we value you, for no man takes
" pains to ſecure what he deſpiſes. By what I

"have ſaid, it appears you are abſolute ladies of "all things; all things are ſubject to you; you "enjoy peace, and are the occaſion of war; if "you would aſk what many of you want, aſk "for moderation and brains."

Scarce was the word brains out of his lips, when all the women together diſcharged their fury upon the wretched doctor, in a ſtorm of blows, ſcratches, and pinches, and ſo outrageouſly did they pull his beard and hair, that they left him as ſmooth as if he had been new ſhaved, and looked more like an old woman than the reverend interpreter of the law. They had quite ſtifled him, but that a multitude of people came in, hearing the noiſe and outcries. Among them a French monſieur, and an Italian monſeignor, had already made known to one another their diſpleaſure by ſome good bangs, and ſaluted their countenances with cuffs, followed by kicks, and ſuch like familiarities. The Frenchman fretted with rage, and the Italian foamed with anger. Italians and Frenchmen flocked to them on all hands; the Germans interpoſed, and having with much difficulty appeaſed them, aſked the cauſe of their ſtrife? The Frenchman gathering up with both hands his breeches, which in the ſcuffle were fallen over his legs, anſwered, "All nations are met

“ here this day, to redreſs their grievances, and “ I among the reſt was diſcourſing with others “ of my countrymen concerning the miſerable “ condition France is in at preſent, and how the “ French are oppreſſed under the tyranny of “ Cardinal Richlieu. I was laying open with “ what art he pretends the king's ſervice, at the “ ſame time he degrades him; how he covers, “ the fox under the purple robe; how, by embroiling all Chriſtendom, he diverts all from “ looking into his practices; how his ſubtilty “ makes a property of his prince's favour; and “ how he had put the power of ſea and land, “ governments, preferments, armies, and fleets, “ into the hands of his kindred and confederates, defaming the nobility, and raiſing the “ unworthy. I was putting my countrymen in “ mind how the Marſhal d'Ancre was hacked “ and hewed in pieces, and called to their remembrance Monſieur de Luiſnes, and how “ yet our king cannot rid himſelf of prime miniſters, ſhowing how this laſt was the only “ friend to the other two, whoſe reputation he “ eſtabliſhed by blackening his own. I was diſcovering to them how of late years traitors “ have hit upon the moſt pernicious art that “ ever hell invented; for perceiving that to “ uſurp kingdoms is become treaſon, and that "he who attempts it is puniſhed as a traitor, "the better to ſecure themſelves in their wicked "practices, they uſurp the kings, calling them"ſelves favourites; and thus, inſtead of being "puniſhed as traitors, they are adored as kings "of kings. I was propoſing, do now propoſe, "and will again propoſe in the general meet"ing, that for the perpetuating the ſucceſſion, "eſtabliſhing of kingdoms, and extirpating this "ſect of traitors, an inviolable and indiſpenſable "law ſhould be enacted, ordaining, That what"ſoever king of France ſhall ſubject himſelf to "a favourite, he and his heirs ſhall *ipſo facto*, "forfeit their title to the crown, and their ſub"jects be abſolved from their oath of allegi"ance; for the Salique law, which excludes "females, does not prevent ſo manifeſt a dan"ger as this that cuts off favourites. I added, "that at the ſame time it ſhould be ordained, "That whatſoever ſubject, under that title, pre"ſumed to uſurp his king, ſhould ſuffer an in"famous death, and forfeit all the eſtate and "honours he ſtood poſſeſſed of, his name for "ever remaining ſcandalous and execrable. "Now that diſtracted Bergamaſco never conſi"dering what was ſaid by me, who never ſo "much as once thought of the nepotes of "Rome, called me heretic, ſaying, That in de-

“ teſting favourites, I deteſted the nepotes, for “ that favourite and nepot are two names, yet “ but one and the ſame thing; and though I “ had not ſpoke a word tending to that mad “ notion, he attacked me as you all beheld.”

The Germans, with the reſt of the ſpectators, were ſurpriſed and amazed. With much difficulty they directed each to his poſt, and diſpoſed the multitude into a ſilent auditory, to hear the propoſitions which were to be made in the name of them all, by a ruddy lawyer who had ſet them all a-madding, and put into their heads ſuch wild and extravagant demands. Two trumpets gave the ſignal for ſilence, when he, ſtanding upon an eminent place in the midſt of the multitude, which ſwarmed about, delivered himſelf in this manner: “ The thing we all aim at “ is the general liberty of all, to be purchaſed “ by contriving how we may be ſubject to juſtice, not to violence: That reaſon may govern us, and not the abſolute power of the “ will: That we may belong to thoſe who inherit, not to them that raviſh us: That we “ may be the care of princes, not their merchandiſe; and in commonwealths, companions, not ſlaves; limbs, not lumber; bodies, “ and not ſhadows: That the rich man hinder “ not the poor from growing rich, nor the poor "grow rich by plundering the wealthy: That "the nobleman deſpiſe not the commoner, nor "the commoner hate the nobleman; and that "the whole care of the government be employed in encouraging the poor to grow rich, and "honouring the virtuous. And in preventing "the contrary, care muſt be taken that no one "man become greater and more powerful than "all the reſt; for he who excels all others deſtroys equality, and they that ſuffer him to "exceed encourage him to conſpire. Equality "is the harmony in which conſiſts the muſic of "the commonwealth's peace; for when diſturbed by an exceſs, it becomes diſcord, and what "before was concert becomes noiſe. Commonwealths are to be ſo united with kings as the "earth (which repreſents the former) is with "the ſea (repreſenting the latter): Theſe always embrace one another, yet ſo as the earth "always defends itſelf againſt the encroachment "of the ſea by its banks; the ſea always threatens the earth, wears and endeavours to overflow and ſwallow it up; and the earth, ever "fixed and unmoved, oppoſes the perpetual "motion and inconſtancy of the ſea. The ſea "ſwells with every wind, every blaſt makes the "earth fruitful. The ſea grows rich with what "the earth commits to it, and the earth with

“ hooks and nets drains and depopulates the ſea. Even as all the ſecurity and ſhelter againſt the ſea is in the land, which furniſhes harbours, ſo commonwealths are a refuge againſt the revolutions and ſtorms of kingdoms. Commonwealths ought always to make war with their heads, ſeldom with their hands, they muſt have armies and fleets ready, in the greatneſs of their ſtock, which is the celerity that lays hold of all opportunities. They are to make war upon kings by ſetting one againſt another; for monarchs, though they be fathers, ſons, brothers, and relations, are like ſteel and file, which though not only near allied, but the ſame ſubſtance and metal, yet the file always cuts and wears away the iron. Commonwealths are to aſſiſt raſh princes, ſo far as may ſerve to overthrow them, and the more cautious far enough to make them raſh. It is their beſt policy to honour trade, becauſe it enriches and carries men throughout the world, gaining them practical experience, by which they diſcover the ports, cuſtoms, government, ſtrength, and deſigns of their neighbours. The ſtudy of politics and mathematics ought to be encouraged, as advantageous to the public; and nothing ought to be ſo much contemned as

" idleneſs, though under never ſo ſpecious a " title, or riches devoted to luxury. All public " ſports ſhall conſiſt of the exerciſe of fire-arms, " and handling of other weapons, as is uſed in " battle, that they may be at once uſeful and " diverting; at the ſame time ſports and exer- " ciſes; and then will it be decent to frequent " the theatres, when they are academies. All " formality of garb is to be abſolutely condemn- " ed; and all the diſtinction betwixt the rich " man and the poor muſt be, that the former " extend relief, and the latter receive it; and " virtue and valour ſhall make the difference " betwixt the nobleman and commoner, for " thoſe virtues were the foundation of all an- " cient nobility. I will here drop a few words " out of Plato; let him that has need of them " gather them up, for I do not know to what " purpoſe I bring them, but ſomebody or other, " perhaps, may know to what purpoſe he ſpoke " them in the third Dialogue, *De Repub. vel de* " *Juſto.* They are theſe: *Igitur rem publicam* " *adminiſtrantibus præcipue, ſi quibus aliis mentiri* " *licet, vel hoſtium, vel civium cauſa in communem* " *civitatis utilitatem, reliquis autem à mendatio* " *abſtinendum eſt.* If it be lawful to any to lie, " it is chiefly allowable to them who govern " the commonwealth, either on account of the

“ enemies or citizens, for the common advantage of the city; all others are to abſtain from lying. I cannot but reflect, that whereas the Catholic church condemns this doctrine of Plato’s Commonwealth, yet there are many that value themſelves upon being his commonwealth. Let us come now to what is propoſed by the ſubjects of kings. Theſe complain, that they are all become elective, becauſe thoſe who are and continue hereditary, elect ſavourites, who become kings by their election. This is that enrages them, becauſe the French tell us, that princes, who, for the better government of their kingdoms, wholly give themſelves up to their favourites, are like galley-ſlaves who travel by force, turning their backs to the port they go to; and that the favourites are like jugglers, who the more they deceive, the more they entertain; and the better they conceal their ſleight from the eyes, and baffle the ſenſes and underſtanding, the more they are valued and praiſed by him that pays for their tricks to divert himſelf. Their chief art conſiſts in making him believe that is full which is empty, that there is ſomething where there is nothing, that thoſe are wounds in others, which are but bruiſes in his armour, and that throw

" away what they hide with their hand. They " ſay they give him money, and when he looks " upon it, he finds dirt or rubbiſh. Theſe com- " pariſons are vile, but theſe men make uſe of " them for want of better, and ſo they affirm " thoſe kings are equally to blame, who will not " be what the great God made them, and thoſe " who would be what he made them not. They " preſume to ſay, that an abſolute favourite " brings upon kings the ſame that death does " upon man, (i. e.) *novam formam cadaveris.* A " new form of a carcaſs, to which follows worms " and corruption, according to the opinion of " Ariſtotle, in his Prince.

" Fit reſolutio uſque ad materiam primam."

That is, " There remains nothing of what was " but the bare reſemblance. So much for this " point. Next, let us go upon the complaints " againſt tyrants, and the reaſon there is for " them. For my own part, I know not who I " ſpeak of, or who I ſpeak not of, whoever un- " derſtands me may explain me. Ariſtotle ſays, " He is a tyrant who has more regard to his " private intereſt than to the public. Whoſo- " ever can inform of any who are not compre- " hended under this definition, may give an ac- " count of them, and they ſhall be well reward-

“ed. They complain more grievouſly againſt tyrants who receive benefits of them, than they that are oppreſſed by them: For the benefits of tyrants make men criminals and accomplices, and their ſeverity proves them virtuous and deſerving. They are of ſuch a nature, that innocence in their dominions muſt be miſerable that it may be happy. A tyrant, in reſpect of his covetouſneſs and avarice, is a wild beaſt; in reſpect of his pride a devil, and in reſpect of his riotouſneſs and luxury, all manner of wild beaſts and devils. Nobody conſpires againſt a tyrant ſooner than himſelf; whence it follows, it is eaſier to kill a tyrant than to endure him. The favour of a tyrant is ever fatal, the greateſt good he does him he favours moſt, is to delay doing him harm. Polyphemus in Homer is the emblem of tyrants. He favoured Ulyſſes, diſcourſing with him, and inquiring into his merits, he heard his entreaties, ſaw his diſtreſs, and all the kindneſs he offered him was, that after eating all his companions, he would devour him at laſt. Let no man hope more favour from a tyrant that devour thoſe under his power, than to be the laſt eaten; and it is to be obſerved, that though the tyrant grants it as a favour, he that is to be eaten takes the delay for an addition of

" cruelty. He that is to devour you after all " the reſt, begins to eat you in all thoſe he eats " before you. The longer he delays feeding on " you, the longer you have to lament you ſhall " become his food. Ulyſſes was preſerved by " the giant as ſuſtenance, not as a gueſt. To " keep him in his den, in order to transfer him " to his ſtomach, was more like burying him a- " live than entertaining him. Ulyſſes put him " to ſleep with exceſs of wine. The bane of " tyrants is ſleep. You that are ſubject to them " caſt them into a ſleep, harden your ſpikes at " the fire, put out their eyes; for that done, it " was nobody did what every one deſired ſhould " be done. The tyrant Polyphemus cried, No- " body had blinded him, becauſe Ulyſſes, with " wonderful ſagacity, had told him his name " was Nobody. He named him with deſire of " revenge, and defended him by the double " meaning of the words. Tyrants themſelves " excuſe thoſe that kill them, or put out their " eyes. Ulyſſes made his eſcape, diſguiſed with " a ſheep's ſkin among the ſheep he kept. That " which a tyrant moſt carefully preſerves, pre- " ſerves his deſtroyer againſt him. Having pre- " miſed thus much, it remains to tell you, that " we ſubjects are met here this day to conſult " how we may defend ourſelves againſt the arbitrary power of thoſe who either meditate, or immediately govern kingdoms and commonwealths. The chief heads I have to offer to this purpoſe are theſe: That all counſellors be fixed for ever in their poſts, without hoping to riſe a ſtep higher, becauſe there is no room for application or juſtice, where a man has one charge, and aims at another; and the ambition of aſcending to another more eminent employment, makes him look upon himſelf as a paſſenger not a reſident; ſo that his charge ſerves only to purchaſe that he aſpires to; and being thus diſtracted he attends neither; not that he has, becauſe he deſigns to leave it, nor that he deſires, becauſe as yet he has it not. Every man is uſeful in that poſt where he has gained experience; and troubleſome where he learns the firſt rudiments, becauſe they remove from buſineſs they were verſed in, to that they do not underſtand. What honours are conferred on them, muſt ſtill be ſuch as are proper to their profeſſion, not mixing civil and military, leſt the ſword and the gown render the habit diſagreeable; for the gown is cumberſome to the ſword, and the ſword diſdains to be hid under the gown. The next thing is, That rewards be indiſpenſable, that is, not only that they be

" beſtowed on the unworthy, but that they be " not permitted to pretend to them; for if the " reward of virtue be exhauſted on vice, the " prince or commonwealth will be robbed of " their greateſt treaſure, and the metal of which " the recompenſe conſiſts, will become baſe and " contemptible. Neither the deſerving, nor un- " deſerving muſt expect it; the former, becauſe " it muſt be immediately given him; the latter, " becauſe he muſt never have it. Gold and " diamonds were better employed in making " fetters to ſecure criminals, than in military and " honourable enſigns beſtowed on vagabonds " and vicious perſons. This doctrine was well " received among the Romans, who, with a " branch of laurel or oak, rewarded more " wounds, and victories over cities, provinces, " and kingdoms, than it bore leaves. Let only " the brave and experienced be admitted to " councils of ſtate and war; let the blood they " have ſpilt, and their qualifications, not the " pride of long genealogies, be their recommen- " dation. The brave and fortunate are to be " preferred to military employments. To be " fortunate as well as valiant is a great addition. " Lucan gives this advice:

——Fatis accede, Deiſque,
Et cole felices, miſeros fuge.

" I have always read theſe words with delight, " and this admirable poet (let who will deny it) " with attention, as preferable to all but Homer " for politics and military ſenſe. The courts of " juſtice are to be filled with learned and diſin- " tereſted perſons. He who is not covetous, is " ſubſervient to no vice, becauſe vices induce " the intereſt for which they are ſold. Let them " know the laws, but not more than the laws. " Let them cauſe them to be obeyed, not make " them obedient to their wills. This is the very " touchſtone of judgment. I have ſaid, you " may now ſay what occurs, and propoſe the " moſt convenient and practicable redreſs againſt " your grievances."

He ceaſed, and the auditors being a multitude of ſeveral nations and languages, there enſued ſuch a confuſed buzzing of unintelligible jargons, that it ſounded as if the whole clack of the tower of Babel had been turned looſe in that place. They underſtood not themſelves, nor one another. All was filled with contention and diſcord, and by their looks and actions they appeared like an aſſembly of people, diſtracted or poſſeſſed. Then the congregation of ſhepherds, whom the ſheep-ſkins, bound about with ſlings, are rather a reproach than a defence againſt the weather, ſaid, " They muſt be heard "immediately before any others, becauſe their "ſheep had rebelled, ſaying, That they kept "them from wolves who eat them one by one "at a time, to the end they themſelves might "ſhear, fleece, kill, and ſell them all at once. "And ſince the wolves at moſt devoured one, "two, ten, or twenty, their deſign was, that the "wolves would guard them againſt the ſhepherds, not the ſhepherds againſt the wolves. "That they looked upon the hunger of their "enemies as leſs prejudicial to them than the "avarice of their guardians, and had brought "the ſhepherds dogs as evidence againſt them." There was not one ſoul but ſaid, "We gueſs "what they would be at, the ſheep are no fools "if they bring this to paſs."

At this ſtand they were when the hour affected them, and being all enraged, ſome cried, "We are for the wolves;" others, "They are "all wolves;" others, "It is all the ſame thing;" others, "They are all bad;" and many others contradicted them. The lawyers perceiving them ready to fall to loggerheads, in order to appeaſe them, ſaid, "It was a caſe that required "mature deliberation, therefore adviſed to defer "it till the next day, and to have recourſe to "the churches to implore a bleſſing on their debates."

The Frenchmen hearing that word, cried out, "If there muſt be recourſe to the churches, we "are undone, and we fear the ſame ſhould befal us as did the owl when ſhe was ſick. She "adviſing about her diſtemper with the fox, "whom ſhe judged the moſt ſkilful among the "beaſts, and alſo with the rook whom ſhe took "for a phyſician, becauſe ſhe often ſaw him upon carrion mules, they told her there was no "remedy for her but to repair to the temples. "The owl hearing their opinion, anſwered, "Then my caſe is deſperate, if the remedy is "only to be found in thoſe holy places, for I "have left them all in the dark, ſucking the oil "out of the lamps, and there is not an idol that "I have not bewrayed." The Italian hearing this diſcourſe, with all his might cried out; "The compariſon is allowed you, and we make "bold to put you, and all ſuch as feed upon the "church, in mind of what Homer relates of the "mice, when they fought with the frogs, for "then they having recourſe to the gods for their "aſſiſtance, all the deities excuſed themſelves, "ſome ſaying they had gnawed their hands, "others their feet, others their garments, others "their crowns, and others the tips of their "noſes, ſo that there was none but miſſed ſome "part of his image, and bore the marks of their

" teeth." Good God! what a hideous tumult the monſieurs raiſed againſt the poor Italian, the confuſion of hell is nothing compared to it. The whole multitude ran great danger in endeavouring to pacify them. At length withheld, but not ſilenced, they are parted, all complaining of what they endured, and every one raving, that he might change his condition with another.

As theſe things were in agitation upon earth, and the gods attentively looking on, the Sun ſaid, " The hour is now at the laſt gaſp, and " the ſhade of the gnomon will in a trice touch " the number five. Great father of all, do thou " determine whether Fortune ſhall proceed be" fore the hour expire, or elſe wheel and roll " back as ſhe uſed to do." Jove anſwered, " I " have anſwered, That during this hour, which " gave to every man what he deſerved, thoſe " who, becauſe they were poor and deſpicable, " were alſo humble, are become proud and in" tolerable; and thoſe who being rich and re" ſpected, were conſequently vicious, perverſe, " arrogant, and wicked, ſeeing themſelves poor " and abject, are become penitent, baſhful, and " pious; ſo that the conſequence is, that thoſe " who were good men are become knaves, and " the knaves good men. This little time may

" ſuffice to ſatisfy the complaints of mortals, " who ſeldom know what they aſk of us; for " ſuch is their frailty, that he who does ill when " he can, forbears when he can do it no longer, " and this is not repentance, but a forced re- " fraining from wickedneſs. Oppreſſion and " miſery curb, but do not correct them. Ho- " nour and proſperity make them act that, which " if they had ſooner attained them, they would " always have acted. Let Fortune direct her " wheel and globe in their former courſe, and " cauſe merits in the wiſe, and puniſhment to " the ſenſeleſs, wherein our infallible providence " and divine preſence ſhall always be aſſiſting to " her. Let all men receive what ſhe diſtributes; " that is, either frowns or ſmiles, ſince neither " are bad in themſelves; for patiently enduring " the former, and magnanimouſly contemning " the latter, they both became equally advan- " tageous. And let him that receives and makes " his misfortune of what he takes to himſelf, " complain of himſelf, and not of Fortune, who " gives to all indifferently, and without favour " or affection. We permit Fortune to com- " plain againſt men, who making a wrong uſe " of their proſperity or adverſity, defame and " curſe her."

At this time it ſtruck five, and the hour of all men was at an end. Then Fortune well pleaſed with what Jove had ſaid, changing hands, began again to ravel up the cares of the world, and unwind what was wound backwards; which done, fixing her globe on the regions of the air, ſhe ſlid down as if ſhe had been upon ice, till ſhe found herſelf upon earth.

Vulcan, that blackſmith god who keeps time with his hammer, cried, "It is hungry weather, "and I being in haſte to obey, left two ropes "of garlic a-roaſting at my forge, to break my "faſt with the Cyclops." All-ruling Jove ordered meat to be brought, and immediately there appeared Iris (chambermaid to Juno) with nectar, and Ganymede with a platter of ambroſia. Juno, who ſpied him by her huſband's ſide, and had more mind to ſuck his blood than to ſwill the heavenly liquor, ſpitting fire, and hiſſing like an adder when his tail has been trod, ſaid, "Either this bardach or I muſt "reign in Olympus, or elſe I will ſue for a di"vorce in Hymen's court." Had not the eagle the rogue beſtrided ſlunk away with him, ſhe had made hawks meat of him with her nails. Jove began to blow his thunderbolt, and ſhe ſaid, "I will ſnatch it from you, to deſtroy that "ſodomite page." Minerva, the product of Jupiter's noddle, who, had he been a blockhead, could never have been born, with fair words ſoothed Juno, enraged with the ſight of her huſband's vile cupbearer. But Venus in a fume heightened her jealouſy, ſcolding like a butter-whore, and rated Jove as if he had been a chimney-ſweeper. Then Mercury letting looſe his clack, ſaid, "All would do well," and therefore deſired them not to diſturb the heavenly banquet. Mars ſeeing the ambroſia handed about in china diſhes, like a roaring bully deity, cried out, "Damn your coffeediſhes, let "the Moon and other petty goddeſſes drink out "of them." Then mixing Bacchus and Neptune, he ſwallowed down both the gods at two or three pulls, and laying hold of Pan, he ſliced him out, and cutting up his flocks of ſheep, devoured them by wholeſale. Saturn ſtayed his ſtomach with half a dozen children. Mercury, like a true ſponger, ſtuck cloſe to Venus, when ſhe was cramming her chops with biſcuits and ſugar-plumbs. Pluto drew out of his knapſack ſome griſkins Proſerpine had provided for his journey; Vulcan, who ſtood gaping, perceiving it, came limping towards him, and courteouſly intruding himſelf with much ceremony, began to lay on and ſwallow. The Sun, who is the father of jollity, pulling out his lute, ſung a hymn in praiſe of Jupiter, running diviſion without end. Venus and Mars being offended at the gravity of the tune, and ſerioufneſs of the words, he, to the harmony of a pair of tongs, roared out a bawdy ſong, and ſhe rattling a pair of overgrown caſtanets, danced a jig, as if ſhe would have ſkipped over the heavens, and ſhaken herſelf to atoms, tickling with her wanton motions the hearts of all the gods. Her dance ſet them all into ſuch an itching, that they could not hold their hands or feet ſtill. Jove, whoſe mouth watered at the lewd motions of the goddeſs, ſaid, "This is a farewell to Ganymede, and no quarrel." He gave them leave, and they being all full and ſatisfied, ſlunk away, crying, "The devil take the hindmoſt," and the lot fell to the eagle ſtriding cupbearer.

BY THE MIGHTY

OLD FATHER TIME,

A

PROCLAMATION.

WE, the mighty Old Father Time, the moſt knowing maſter in the world, univerſal heir to all mankind, ſovereign lord of all things, death's champion, and one of her privy council; ſupreme judge in ſpirituals and temporals, and general overſeer of the univerſe; having our commiſſion from the Almighty, and being accordingly informed of very many great and intolerable abuſes committed in this worldly commonwealth, that our zeal for reformation may appear, do ſtrictly charge and command all our juſtices, and other officers in all parts whatſoever, that they obſerve and ſee all that is contained in this our proclamation be obſerved, under the penalties herein mentioned.

Imprimis, In regard we have been informed of the great cheats and extortions by innkeepers, we do ordain then, for the future, their houſes be not called inns, but exchanges of thieves, becauſe their trade is rather robbing than ſelling, upon pain of his being obliged to make uſe of them, who ſhall be found guilty of the contrary.

Item, Being informed that there is a ſort of ſponging eleemoſynary travellers, who lie at friends houſes longer than they ought to do, it is our will that the firſt day they be made welcome, received with a pleaſant countenance, and lovingly entertained; the ſecond day they ſhall be treated after an indifferent manner, and the third with neglect and uneaſineſs, looking upon them no longer as friends, but enemies to the houſe and eſtate. And we order all who feed upon the public to be baniſhed our commonwealth.'

Item. Perceiving that generally barbers have a natural inclination to fidling and ſcraping, we direct, that, inſtead of a long pole and baſon, their ſign be one, or ſeveral fiddles, according to the barber's ſtock or ability. And in regard that they throw away men's beards into the dirt, they being a thing of reſpect and honour, it is our will, that, for the time to come, they preſerve them to make bruſhes to clean pictures and their own looking glaſſes. That conſider, ing every time they trim, a man looks ten years younger than he did before, which is like flattery in painting; therefore, for the future, they ſhall not be called barbers but painters.

Item, For as much as all painters are naturally flatterers, and make it their buſineſs to mend all the faults of nature, and perceiving they cannot do the ſame kindneſs to their own ſons and daughters, who are ſeldom handſome; we do require, that hereafter, ſince they can give no ſatisfactory reaſon for ſo doing, they paint the ladies as they really are, and not with their hands on their breaſts, as if they were ſwearing by their honour the picture was well done, nor in ſtrange wild habits, and ſo looſe, as if they were in readineſs to go to bed with the firſt man that comes in, and had all their breaſts expoſed to invite him to it. And if they fail hereof, we do ordain that they be called ſycophants and flatterers, and that the owner does not like the picture.

Item, Obſerving the various ſects and multitude of poets, it has pleaſed God to permit to over-run the world, as a puniſhment of our ſins, It is our will that thoſe that are to be worn out, the time allowed for ſpending them be two years; and if any ſhall remain after that time, ſince all human means fail, they ſhall be laid by charms and ſpells, as they do the devil. We do farther declare all thoſe poets heathens and infidels, who diſguiſe themſelves and their ladies under Pagan names, as Diana, Daphne, Coridon, &c.

Item, In regard that aſtrologers, poets, and rhetoricians have a conceit that they alone are maſters of figures, with which they conceal and palliate their cheats, We do declare that all thoſe ſhall be looked upon as ſcurvy figures, who take off their hats to nobody, eſpecially if it proceed from pride; thoſe who ſpeak ill of every thing; thoſe who, to be thought contemplative, deſignedly ſpeak from the purpoſe, though they do it with premeditation; thoſe who have no eſtate, and yet boaſt of their extravagancies; thoſe who in dirty weather pick the ſtones, and ſalute all the women they meet, though they be old and ugly; thoſe who would be thought to pray all the morning, and pick their teeth in the afternoon; all old men that endeavour to look young, and gallant women; and do require that theſe laſt be not permitted to go abroad without tutors, ſince, notwithſtanding their age, they would make themſelves children. We alſo include in this number all women who are either handſome, or old, and yet paint, and all widows that are ever talking of their late huſbands, only to inveigle new ones; as alſo thoſe women, who, when they are in a coach, do not take notice of their moſt familiar acquaintance, that ſo they may be the more taken notice of themſelves.

Item, Obſerving the pride and vanity of valets de chambre and footmen, grown ſaucy by the encouragement they have from their maſters, and accordingly mimicking the gentlemen, by running in debt, wearing watches in their pockets, powdering their wigs, and talking of races, dogs, and whores, We do ordain that they be called gentlemen ſcoundrels, or knights panders, and that they be obliged to lie with the horſes or dogs upon ſtraw, or on louzy flock beds, in the ſtews where the profeſſion is.

Item, Obſerving the ceremonious ſubmiſſive impertinency of ſome perſons in bowing and cringing, beyond the bounds of civility and courteſy, We do ordain, that it be looked upon as want of breeding and good manners; and if they do not amend it, that they be for ever obliged to continue bowing and crooked, like the devil that broke his back with carrying tailors to hell, and that their breeches fall down when they are in moſt company.

Item, We make it known to all kings and princes in the world, that they muſt not think themſelves the greateſt becauſe men are uncovered before them, for the heat is much greater to which they ſtand bare and uncovered themſelves.

Item, For as much as we have obſerved that there are abundance of tricks and contrivances in relation to giving and begging, for the better relief of purſes, and that there may be an eaſy anſwer to all ſharping and begging women, We declare, that for the future none ſhall give any thing but the time of the day, good night and good morrow, a hand to a woman that falls, precedence to ſuperiors in all places, and good words to all people. We farther direct, that no man preſume to give gowns and petticoats, upon pain of being reputed an aſs; but may be allowed to give as many promiſes as he pleaſes, never to be performed, and that he give all impudent jades to the devil who beg treats and entertainments. And if a man be compelled to give any thing, let it be a little at a time and often, as phyſicians adviſe people to drink, for ſo it will laſt the longer, and every gift is a freſh obligation. And it is our will, that all thoſe who ſhall not fulfil theſe our commands be for ever poor and in love, and have neither money nor miſtreſs.

Item, Being ſenſible that the world ſwarms with a ſort of impudent, ſhameleſs and impertinent men of buſineſs, We direct, that they be excluded all offices and employments, that only ſome few of them be admitted to be clerks and beadles of pariſhes, and the reſt be diſtributed about the country to inſtruct baſhful wenches, and backward ſchool-boys; and that as many as remain be beſtowed among the oyſter and herb-women, and for their puniſhment inſtead of executioners, that they be delivered up to be tormented by fools that have a conceit of their own wit.

Item, We declare all tradeſmen madmen, who make any account of great men's promiſes of payment; and thoſe great men to be reputed under the ſame capacity, who value not what price they buy at, reckoning how long it will be before they pay, when they ought to conſider there is no term ſo long but comes at laſt, and that always too ſoon, when they are obliged to part with the money, and then they all look like fools.

Item, In regard of the many murders, and other miſchiefs, daily committed by phyſicians, ſurgeons, apothecaries, babblers, Sir Poſſitives and Ignoramuſes, We do here declare them mortal enemies to the lives and reputations of mankind, as we do lawyers, attorneys, jilts, and pickpockets to their purſes.

Item, Being ſatisfied there is a generation of ſlaughtering bullies, who kill none but ſuch as ſuffer themſelves to be killed, it is our will, that none be called bravoes, but ſuch as are, or pretend to be, deſcended from phyſicians, ſurgeons, and apothecaries.

Item, Conſidering the many irregularities committed among thoſe women, who by reaſon of their age might be called mothers, We do require, that whenſoever any that is above thirty-eight years of age ſhall not laugh, where there is occaſion, it ſhall not be attributed to want of ſenſe or ſatisfaction, but of teeth; and therefore for concealing of this defect, whenſoever they have an inclination to grin, they may be allowed to hold their fan or their muff before their mouth. And this and no other formality ſhall be allowed to any above the age of twenty-five.

Item, Calling to mind the many extravagancies of leud men, We do forbid all perſons calling any thing pinked which is torn, or taking pet at what ſtanders by ſay, becauſe they loſe at play; or being poſitive in any matter of no moment, upon pain of being brought into much trouble and danger. It ſhall therefore be an irrevocable law, that no man take pet at any time, or for any cauſe whatſoever. It is alſo our will, that no man give the title of faſting or abſtemiouſneſs to that which is really want of meat and neceſſary hunger. And whereas it is a common ſaying, that heats and colds, troubles and ſurfeits, deſtroy moſt people, We declare, that though it is true, heats and colds bring ſome to their end, and ſome few may come to it by ſorrows; yet that empty bellies bring more to the grave, than all of them together.

Item, In regard that troubles have complained to us that all gray hairs have been laid to their charge, We declare, that they are wronged, and thoſe are only the effect of age, and ſo we command all perſons to own.

Item, Reflecting on the infinite multitude of madams there are now adays, which title has been uſurped by all ſorts of women, from the palace to the oyſter-hall, We do ordain, that the ſaid title be turned out of all houſes of credit and reputation, and condemned to herb-women, chandlers, hawkers, whores, and bawds.

Item, For as much as there is a great ſcarcity of true friends, in regard there are only friends where there is no need, all words and nothing of ſincerity, We direct, that, for the future, all friends be as well known as money, whoſe value is tried before it comes to be uſed.

Item, Perceiving how much every gallant values every thing that drops from his miſtreſs, that he may take and keep it as a favour, We declare, that what drops in public is no favour, but a ſlight that he may buy her better; and therefore he may as well take to himſelf what ſhe drops in private, which, though not ſo ſweet, is leſs coſtly.

We farther ordain, that no woman wear ſilk upon ſilk, nor one huſband upon another; and that ſome women paſſing for maids, do not impoſe upon the world what really is not.

And for a comfort to the ſlaves in the galleys and mines, We declare, that they are no greater ſlaves than huſbands that have bad wives.

Item, Being ſatisfied that cuckoldom is become a matter of honour and profit, and that many miſchiefs happen in the world, becauſe they who are ſo know not how to manage it, We do therefore ordain, that they be incorporated into a company, and none admitted to it without being examined and approved of, though he be an alderman or a ſeaman.

We alſo declare all patient huſbands incapable of making a will, and think not fit they who had none of their own when living, ſhould be allowed it when they are dead.

We farther forbid all men that have no teeth, marrying, eſpecially old or lean women; for women now-a-days are ſo looſe and impudent, that they ſcarce value men that ſhow their teeth; and as a wife is old or lean, a toothleſs huſband will have enough to do to gnaw her.

Item, In regard it is requiſite to comfort the huſbands, and ſay ſomething in behalf of the women, We declare, that the latter give the former three good days, or nights, which are the wedding night, the firſt time they are delivered, and when they die. And in anſwer to foul mouthed railers, who call women liars, We declare, they ſpeak truth three times in their lives; the firſt when they ſay, this head of mine makes me diſtracted; the ſecond, when the huſband in bed bidding them turn this way, they reply, I have nothing elſe to think on, I'll warrant you; and the laſt, when they cannot eat at table becauſe they have crammed themſelves in private, and ſay, I ſhall never have much ſtomach as long as this courſe of life laſts.

We farther ordain, that whoſoever ſhall happen to kill a bailiff's follower, or an informer, which is no better than an apple-woman's cur, a jailor's tool, an uſeleſs piece of lumber in the commonwealth, and the devil's inſtrument, or any other officer belonging to the evidencing trade, may be allowed to flay him, and carry about the ſkin among all perſons who are in law, that every one may give him a reward.

Item, For as much as we are ſenſible there is a ſort of lawyers, who, like common ſtrumpets, admit of every client, eſpecially if he is but eager and paſſionate, and put interpretations, and make additions to the laws according to the crowns they receive, ſo inverting their true ſenſe and meaning, We do ordain, that they be looked upon as hackney interpreters, and men that plead for the increaſe of controverſies, and not for their clients; and we declare thoſe countries happy which have none ſuch, as thoſe ſeas may be called pacific where there are no pirates. And in regard that the ſenſeleſs multitude thinks all learning and wiſdom conſiſts in old age, and grizly long beards, we direct all ſcholars, before they go to the univerſities, to turn hermits for ſome years to enhance their ſtock of beards, and abſolutely forbid their coming near the barber's, leſt they happen unluckily to take off their knowledge in their beards.

We farther declare all thoſe to be void of ſenſe and reaſon, who otherwiſe being well enough qualified, take a pride in being unmannerly, and incur the hatred of all men for refuſing the civility of the hat, as if pride and ill nature were the only ingredients for making a man great.

Item, It is our will and pleaſure, that thoſe who make a practice of calling every man Tom and Jack, though he be never ſo grave a perſon, or very much above them, be obliged to make full reſtitution to all they have robbed of their juſt titles and honours, and be themſelves ever reputed incapable of any more reſpect than what they have ſhown to others.

To conclude, In regard that abundance of poets are unhealthy, and in a dangerous condition, by the overſwelling of their veins, We ordain, that all ſurgeons take care in time to let them blood, and that they do it with fleams, as horſes are ſerved, for fear of ſpoiling their lancets, and incurring our high diſpleaſure.

All which laws and ordinances we do enjoin our juſtices to ſee ſtrictly obſerved, as is uſual in other caſes.

By order of the inviſible council,

ODIOUS TELLTRUTH, *Secretary*.

A

TREATISE

OF

All Things whatſoever, and many more.

By the moſt Learned and moſt Expert,

DR. WISEACRE.

Dedicated to the Company of Buſy-Bodies, and the Society of Babblers, and the Tribe of Old Impertinences.

CHAP. I.

Containing many wonderful, unaccountable, and prodigious Secrets, which can never fail.

ADVERTISEMENT.

Curious or ſlovenly reader, for either may ſerve to the buſineſs in hand, I firſt give them the ſtrange and ſtupendous propoſitions, where you may pitch upon the wonder you have a mind to perform, and obſerving what number it has before, ſeek the ſame in the ſolutions, where you will find the method of performing. Be not diſcouraged at the difficulty you find in the propoſition, for the ſolution will make it as eaſy as piſſing abed.

PROPOSITIONS.

1. To oblige all handſome women to follow you if you are a man, and the rich gallants if you are a woman.

2. To be ſure of a good reception wherever you go, and it is infallible.

3. To make the woman you like run after you whereſoever you go, though you have never ſeen her but once in your life.

4. That men and women may grant all you aſk of them.

5. To be rich and poſſeſs much money.

6. To come at any woman without ever failing.

7. That no clothes you have may ever wear out.

8. That no hawk may fly away from you, though you turn him looſe.

9. That you may never be troubled with the toothach.

10. That you may never grow gray or old.

11. How a barren woman may have children.

12. To prevent tailors ſtealing your cloth or ſtuff.

13. That you may never die.

14. That you may not die without ſomebody to pray by you.

15. To be ſpeedily advanced to high poſts and places.

16. To be in great eſteem.

17. To prevent growing old.

18. To prevent diſcovering a bald pate, though you have never a hair on it, without wearing a wig.

19. That you may be ſucceſsful in all lawſuits.

20. That you may never lie long ſick.

21. That the bugs may not bite you at night.

22. To be beloved by all men.

23. To prevent confeſſing on the rack, do not diſcover it to thieves and murderers.

24. To ſhake off all bolts and irons in priſons, though never ſo ſecure.

SOLUTIONS.

1. Be ſure always to keep before them when they are going.

2. Give ſomething in every place, and you will find ſo good a reception that you will have cauſe to repent.

3. Steal what ſhe has, and ſhe will purſue you to the end of the world.

4. Deſire the women to take all you have, and the men to give you nothing, and they will all grant it.

5. If you have money, keep it; and if you have not, do not covet it, and you will be rich enough.

6. If ſhe walks, put on; if ſhe puts on, run; if ſhe runs, fly; and you will ſoon come at her

7. Tear them to rags yourſelf, and they will not wear.

8. Pull all his feathers, and he'll not fly a jot.

9. Draw them all, though it be no ornament to the jaws.

10. Die when you are young or new born.

11. Let her conceive and bring forth, and breed them up.

12. Let them make no clothes for you, for that is the only remedy.

13. Be not a fool, for only they die; unfortunate men are killed by the ſword, ſick men by their phyſicians, and fools die of their own accord.

14. Commit ſome heinous crime, and at the gallows you will not want ſomebody to pray by you.

15. Get upon the Alps or Pyrenean mountains.

16. Get much money, live high, and treat all that come near you.

17. Keep always in the ſun in ſummer, and in the wet in winter; never give yourſelf reſt, fret at every thing that happens, eat your meat cold, and drink water, meddle in every body's buſineſs, for this is the ſure way never to come to be old.

18. Wear your hat eternally, do not take it off to go to bed; if another takes off his to you, requite him with a nod or bow; and if any body ſays you are unmannerly, tell them it is better to be ſo than bald. And if any one ſhould quarrel with you becauſe you are not civil, and ſhould happen to kill you, it is better ſtill to be dead than bald; and take care to die with your hat on, as Julius Cæſar did to cover his head when they murdered him.

19. Never pay your counſellor, nor your ſolicitor, nor any fees of the court, for all that money is certainly loſt, and it is a daily charge upon you. And if you pay them and gain your cauſe, ſtill *your money is gone*; and if you are caſt, ſtill worſe. And take notice, that before you go to law, the controverſy is, whether the money is yours or anothers; but when once the

ſuit is begun, the contrivance is, that it be neither yours nor the others, but theirs who pretend to defend you both.

20. Send for your phyſician when you are well, and give him money, becauſe you are not ſick; for if *you give it him* when *you* are *ill*, how can you expect he ſhould give you health, which he gets nothing by, and remove the diſtemper he lives by.

21. Sit up all night, and go to bed by day.

22. Lend and never be paid, preſent, treat, bear, endure, do good turns, hold your peace, and ſuffer yourſelf to be cheated.

23. Deny all that is laid to your charge.

24. Pay the jailor and they will all drop off.

CHAP. II.

Divination and Aſtrology.

Much rain is a certain ſign of wet weather.

Coughing, rheums, and pains in the teeth, betoken a cold.

The Moon in *Piſces*, ſignifies ſhe has a fiſh dinner, ſhe will decreaſe, and the lanthorns will be carried about at night.

Whenſoever the Moon is in *Taurus*, there is no doubt but they will have four horns betwixt them, and the ſun will riſe in the morning.

The old moons make bad winter nights, and then the winds make a noiſe if they blow hard.

Jupiter in *Libra*, looks like a grocer at his ſcales, and denotes there will be ſummer and winter that year.

Jupiter in *Aries*, denotes melancholy in all that cannot be merry.

Venus in *Gemini*, portends that whores will not be ſatisfied with one.

Saturn in *Capricorn*, threatens the heads of huſbands who have lewd wives.

Mercury in *Leo*, will not be unlike one that ſhows wild beaſts, foreſhows diſtempers in thoſe that eat abundance of melons and cucumbers, and drink water of them, and that the ſick will die, if the phyſician take them in hand.

The Moon in the *Dragon's Head*, ſignifies the dragon has a head.

The full moon ſignifies that ſhe can hold no more; and this is a certain rule.

An eclipſe of the ſun is the nobleſt eclipſe, denotes it will be darkened whilſt it laſts, and that aſtrologers will tell abundance of lies, which fools will believe, and mighty men will dread.

A blazing ſtar with a long tail looks like quality, and foretels abundance of people of all ſorts will be gazing at it; and if it be fiery, all the princes will die that year who cannot live till the next.

A great conjunction is a certain ſign that many kings will meet, and ſome be taken at cards. Many great men, as well as little ones, will contrive conjunctions with females, and ſome of them will obſtruct them. Ptolemy, Origanus, Albumazor, &c.

CHAP. III.

Of Omens.

If you are going to buy any thing, and when you ſhould pay for it, cannot find your purſe, it is the worſt omen that can happen, and unlucky for your marketing.

If you are going to fight, and drop your ſword, it is much better than if your noſe had dropped off; but if it happen to drop when you are fighting, and your head is broken, the omen is bad for you, but good for the ſurgeon.

If you happen to ſee crows fly acroſs you when you go abroad, let them fly, and take heed where you ſet your feet.

Tueſday is an unlucky day for thoſe who travel afoot without money, and for thoſe who are caſt into gaol.

If you happen to ſpill the ſalt, to prevent the ill omen, take it up and eat a dinner; or if you will not, riſe preſently from table, and eat nothing that day, which is the way to verify the omen, for it is no ſmall misfortune to faſt.

All thoſe are unlucky days and unfortunate hours to them on which the conſtable ſeizes a criminal, the bailiff arreſts a debtor, the gameſter draws in a culley, the great man diſcovers a flatterer, and a whore enſnares a young man.

Three of the beſt things in the world are very odious to three ſorts of people; health to phyſicians, peace to ſoldiers, and ſincerity to lawyers.

CHAP. IV.

How Things are to be done, and on what Days, that they may prove Fortunate.

SUNDAY the ſun rules; it is a good day to ſpunge a dinner, and it does no harm though it be ſomewhat better than ordinary; for, according to Galen and Hippocrates, ſurfeits that coſt nothing are not dangerous; and the ſun is in his own houſe, and you in another man's.

On Monday buy all that you can meet with at an under-rate, or good, or take what is to be had for nothing.

On Tueſday receive all that is given you, without once excuſing yourſelf or drawing back, for it is Mars's day, and he will look upon you with an ill aſpect, if you ſhould refuſe the firſt proffer, and not have a ſecond.

On Wedneſday aſk of every body you meet, and perhaps Mercury may give ſome one vanity enough to grant you ſomething.

Thurſday is a good day to believe nothing that flatterers ſay.

Friday is a proper day to ſhun a creditor, or an arreſt, or any that would ſpunge a dinner.

Saturday is as convenient a day as any to lie abed long in a morning, to walk at your eaſe, to eat a hot dinner, to talk at pleaſure, to wear good clothes and eaſy ſhoes, becauſe Saturn is old and loves his eaſe.

CHAP. V.

Of Phyſiognomy.

WHOSOEVER has frizly black hard hair, will put the barber to more trouble; and he who breeds lice will ſcratch his head often.

He that is bald will have no hair; and if he happens to have any, it will not be on the bald place. If theſe men wear beards, their heads ſhine, and their faces look like hairy heads, and their heads like beardleſs faces.

He who has a low forehead, and full of wrinkles, will look like a monkey, and be ridiculous to all that behold him.

He who has a high forehead, will have his eyes under it, and will live all the days of his life, and this is infallible.

Thoſe who have little diminitive noſes ſunk in their heads, ſo that ill ſcents can ſcarce find them out, are men, though they look like ſomething elſe, and begin to be death's-heads whilſt they are living. They are ſeldom choleric, becauſe they can ſcarce find their noſes to take ſnuff.

A great mouth from ear to ear, ſignifies much foam and no bridle, and theſe are not hard-mouthed, but all mouth.

A little mouth drawn up like a purſe, or a ſnout, denotes darkneſs within, and looks more like a loop-hole than a window.

A watery mouth that is all foam when hot, ſputters when it ſpeaks, and overflows when it laughs, will have need of a ſlabbering-bib.

He who has great hands will have large fingers, and ten nails on them and the thumbs, and if he ſtrikes hard it will fall heavy.

Sparkling eyes, have no ill ſcent, and ſhine.

Green and blue eyes look more like birds than women.

No woman that has good eyes, a good mouth, and good hands, can never be handſome, or avoid being a ſcarecrow; for if once ſhe values herſelf upon her eyes, ſhe does ſo ogle, caſt ſuch languiſhing looks, gaze about, and dart ſuch glances, that the devil himſelf cannot endure her: If ſhe has fine hands, ſhe is ever beating time to all ſhe ſays, righting her dreſs, and playing with her fingers, till ſhe will put a dead man out of patience. Then, if ſhe has curious teeth, her lips are ever tucked up, ſhe laughs, ſhe grins, ſhe yawns, and is continually like a ſnarling dog, or the picture of a ſoul in hell. So that you will find, that a mouth like a purſe, blear eyes, and clumſy hands, much better, as contented with the uſes they were made for.

A woman that has a face like a hotchpoc, with a ſwine's ſnout, coarſe fleſh, as it were beef, and all other ſuitable features, and valuing herſelf upon her fine dreſs, pretending to beauty that is only purchaſed at the ſhops, deſerves to be hung up for a ſign, or to be condemned to an eternal maſk, never to be taken off, for fear of diſgracing her dreſs.

A lanthorn-jawed woman, with a hatchet-face, ſunk eyes, a hook noſe, paper lips, leather cheeks, dark gums, ſtraggling teeth, and ſuch a low forehead, that her hair ſerves inſtead of eyebrows, if ſhe happen to correct all theſe living enormities by her wit, when ſhe begs may have a hearing given her, but no money, and ſhe may be allowed to take her degree in the univerſity, but not to have a lover. Let her words and wit be commended, but not her ſhape or face; give her a place in libraries, but none in your affections; let her be heard at any time, but never looked at.

There is a ſort of concealed old women now in faſhion, who have all the effects of age upon them, and give out, that they loſt their teeth by a defluction, that their wrinkles belong to the family, and their gray-hairs came with troubles and ſickneſs. Theſe are fit to be made houſe-keepers, or nurſes, for then it will be no ſhame for them to be old, and they will not ſuffer the very girls to be young, which will be ſome revenge, though *they are paſt redreſs.*

Women that have curious eyebrows, in all likelihood will have eyelaſhes under them, and will be beloved if any body takes a liking to them.

Whenſoever you ſee a man that has but one eye, you may certainly conclude he has loſt the other.

Thoſe who ſquint will put others to much trouble to decide which way they look.

Left-handed men are very ignorant, for it ſeems they do not know their right hand from their left, ſince the one has the office, and the other the place; they are ill-contrived people, for they never do any thing the right way.

Never have any thing to do with a crooked man; but conclude he is of an ill inclination, and can never be upright, as long as he goes bowing.

An eunuch, who is neither man nor woman, and yet looks like both, is not to be endured, as being of the doubtful gender, and never to be relied on.

They that have ſmall feet, will need but little ſhoes, and will have a light pair of heels.

CHAP. VI.

Of Chiromancy, or Predicting by the Lines in the Hands. A ſhort Chapter.

CURIOUS READER,

ALL the lines you ſee in the hands, ſignify that the hand bows that way and not backwards, and that it doubles the joints; and therefore the great ones are in the joints, and the ſkin being thin, the other ſmall ones are made by the gathering of it: And to convince you of this truth, you may obſerve, that there are lines on the neck, the forehead, the lips, the hams, the elbows, and the bottom of the buttocks, where the ſkin gathers; and therefore if theſe obſervations were true, as there is chiromancy, there ought to be frontimancy, collimancy, pedimancy, nitimancy, &c.

CHAP. VII.

How to learn all Arts and Sciences in one Day.

IF you deſire to be maſter of all languages, ſpeak them among ſuch as do not underſtand them. *Probatum.*

If you would be a Welchman, change all *b's* into *p's*, and the *d's* into *t's*, and the work is done; as for *blood*, ſay *ploot;* for *blue*, ſay *plue*, &c.

To be an Iriſhman, ſay *Arra dear joy*, and *be me ſhoul*, and change *wh* into *f;* as for *what*, ſay *fat;* for *when*, *fen*, &c.

To be a Scotſman, turn *e* into *a*, *i* into *e*, and *o* into *a*, as for *where*, ſay *whare;* for *die*, ſay *dee;* for *ſoul*, ſay *ſaul;* ſpeak very broad, and never ſtick at bawdy, and that is enough.

To be an Italian, turn *c* into *ch*, and *ch* into *k;* ſay *pian piano*, and *cazzo en culo*, &c.

To be a Frenchman, ſwear begar, *jerney blew*, for *me* ſay *I*, and put all your accents on the laſt ſyllables, and you need no more.

Dutch is as eaſy as the reſt; for it only requires ſaying *dis* for *this*, *dat* for *that*, *turd* for *third*, and then ſwearing *ſacramenten*, and calling upon *ten hundred touſand ton of devils*, and the work is over.

As for cant and gibberiſh, every ſchoolboy and rogue is maſter of them. Latin is always taken for granted, Greek, Hebrew, and the Oriental languages are ſo little known, that it is but ſaying you ſpeak them, and few will queſtion it.

If you would be a famous phyſician, keep a chariot with a pair of old horſes, wear a great ſtone ring, a black coat, and a wig that is neither long nor ſhort, without powder; and though you cannot read, you will be as abſolute a phyſician as Galen or Hippocrates; but if you walk on foot, you will never riſe to the degree of a quack; for the main knowledge lies in the horſes. When you come into a houſe be always in haſte, feel the pulſe and look grave: Then aſk, "Was he feveriſh?" If they ſay he was, anſwer, "I thought as much." Next, "Did "the fit laſt long?" If they ſay it did, tell them, "It plainly appears." If he has no ſtomach, charge him not to eat any thing that is groſs; but let him drink ptyſan, order a clyſter; if he ſays he cannot take it, ſay, "It is as much as "his life is worth;" write half a ſcore receipts, that the apothecary may ſell his traſh, and be your friend, and that the patient may be ſicker. If this does not do, bleed him, then bliſter him from head to foot: If he dies not preſently, repeat it till he does, and then tell them his hour was come; it was a malignant diſtemper; there [illegible] no oppoſing the will of God; you have done all that art could deviſe; and the heir will take it all for granted, and allow you double fees. If by chance the patient recovers, let him know his caſe was deſperate, but that you had a noſtrum which ſaved his life; that it has coſt you many years ſtudy; that it is a moſt ſovereign remedy, and little of it to be had. If you happen to caſt the water, be ſure to ſhake it well, look into it narrowly, make faces, and ſhake your head at it. Then though the patient be only troubled with chilblains, bid him make his peace with God, and ſettle his affairs, ſo you gain reputation if he lives, and are thought to have foretold it if you kill him. To gain the credit of being employed by great men, make always ſome excuſe to ſtop at their doors, and go in, though it be but to aſk an impertinent queſtion. Get ſome of your truſty friends to call you up late at night, crying out in the ſtreet, that all the neighbourhood may hear, "Sir, The "duke has ſent for you in all haſte. Quickly, "Sir, my lady marchioneſs is like to die. Make "haſte, Sir, the biſhop is fallen into a fit." Thus will you gain eſteem, become a doctor of fame, and have power of life and death over all that believe you.

If you would be a great perſon, though you ſprung out of a dunghill, be very ignorant, w[illegible] that nobody can read it, talk much, though [illegible] be nonſenſe, run deep in debt, and pay nobody; be very lewd and profane, and keep where you are not known, and the work is done.

If you would be a lawyer, to ruin all cauſes but your own, always take care to talk of Coke and Littleton, get two or three caſes by heart, and apply them right and wrong. When any man tells you his caſe, ſay the law is plain on his ſide, it is impoſſible to hurt him. When you plead, talk much, and very loud, and ſtand ſtifly to what you ſay, though it be nothing to the purpoſe, for in law the moſt ſaid is beſt, and though the judges ſhould not approve of it, your client will, if he ſees you roar till you ſweat and are hoarſe. Aſſure every man his cauſe is good and juſt, though it be an open cheat and forgery, or downright nonſenſe; and be aſſured there is no folly or wickedneſs in the world but has ſome law on its ſide; for what can be more abſurd, than not to drink wine or eat bacon, and yet the law of Mahomet forbids it. If you do not underſtand one word of your client's caſe, yet tell him, you take him, you have pleaded the like twenty times. Upon occaſion you may quote ſtatutes at random, and adjudged caſes out of any, though they never [illegible] writ. But be ſure you have a ſtudy well ſtored with large folios, though they be nothing but old romances, or ſome caſt pleadings, which you may have cheap at the grocers. If ever you happen to be gravelled for an author, ſay you met with the like caſe at the aſſizes in any country at a great diſtance, and be ſure to wear a very dirty ragged gown, and to be always in a hurry.

If you would be a chemiſt, and make gold of ſtones, herbs, and dirt, turn apothecary, and you will turn all the traſh you ſell into gold; and take heed of diſſolving of metals, and extracting of their virtues; for by that means you will ſooner turn gold into dirt, than dirt into gold. Take my word for it, the only way to make gold, is to trade; ſo you ſee the mercer makes gold of ſilk, the chandler of mops and brooms, the bookſeller of paper, and the baker of bread, the ſurgeon of blood and wounds, and the phyſician of the excrements.

If you would be a Hector, though you have no more heart than a hen, bridle up your hat round cloſe to the crown, wear dirty linen, bind the pummel of your ſword before you, talk hoarſe, ſtrut and ſtare, wear little whiſkers, keep your ſkull hot with brandy, ſwear, curſe, blaſpheme, talk bawdy, for theſe are the qualifications that make a man brave. Speak of [illegible]thing but quarrels and encounters you have been in, and of the wounds you have received. When ſwords are drawn be very ſedate, and very haſty and paſſionate when none appear;

play the fury in jeſt, and take notice of nothing that is ſaid in earneſt. When any man is hurt afar off, drop a few words, as if you had done it, and drink to the memory of all the bullies deceaſed, and by this means you will be dreaded as much as a peſtilential fever.

A

LETTER

GIVING

An Account of the Author's Journey into Andaluſia with the King.

I HAD a fall, but Lucifer had a greater; my feet need no great help to ſtumble, for my legs naturally ſtammer, and I have a hitch in my pace. The admiral's coach overturned, we were ſix of us in it, and Don Henrique Henriquez broke his head. I got out at the garret window, one tugging at me by the jaws, whilſt another cried, “ Don Franciſco give me your “ hand ;” and I anſwered, “ Don, what is your “ name, give me your foot.” I got out of the coach, as if I had roſe out of my grave, and found the clumſy coachman ſwearing, he [illegible] did the like in his life. I told him, “ You have “ overturned us as cleverly, as if you had done “ it an hundred times.” We came to Aranjuez, and that night Don Henrique and I lay upon two wafers inſtead of quilts, without pillows. I ſlept as if I had been in the ſtocks, and dreamed of a bed, for that was all I could do. This is the way of living you would have news of, and wants nothing to make it wretched, ſince it wants your good table; but all troubles and ſufferings are leſs in an admiral's company. His majeſty is ſo hardy, that he is almoſt every day on horſeback, and neither ſnow nor hail puts him by it. The common council of Tembleque entertained his majeſty with a bull-feaſt, where many ſhowed their courage at the ſport, and ſome their ſkill. Boniface looked on, and was concerned at nothing. There were fire-works which ſucceeded well. His majeſty ſhot a bull, whom all the mob could not hough. Boniface the king's jeſter, and the murderer of good diſhes, thruſt in at the admiral's table. The next day he went to Madrilejos, where Boniface again appeared amidſt our diſhes and cups, ſaying, "I am Boniface, to whom nothing comes amiſs." We ſet out for Membrilla, and to pleaſe the magiſtrates of Manza[illegible], in complaiſance to their requeſt, his ma[illegible]y paſſed by our eſtate, and every body liked the town. Thence we went down to Membrilla, where we ſlept by the bottle, for there was brave toſſing of pots, and fox-hunting down our throats. Hence followed quarrels, and unlaying of goods. It was agreed to riſe betimes, and we ſet out for my eſtate of Torre de Juan Abad, where his majeſty was fain to throw down the houſe allotted him, that he might go to bed; it was ſo good, that it was better down than up. Here Sir Holdfaſt Sparepenny was ſhy of being ſeen by any body. It was comical to behold Don Miguel de Cardenas walking about the road, and calling out with a wiſp of ſtraw burning in his hand, like a blazing ſtar, with a black tail. From the tower we went to Santiſtevan, where the earl of that name had hung out abundance of lights, and ſome fireworks run along a rope, as if they had been ropedancers, and then a bull came and ſinged his beard. There were pipes and waits brought from afar off, gentlemen from Ubeda and Baeza, abundance of quality ſtanding about the hangings, plenty of belly timber, mighty preſents, tents ſet up all about the county with wine, bread, and cheeſe, fellows with clear throats inviting the paſſengers, and begged for God's ſake, ſaying, "Take ſome of the Count de Santiſtevan's "bounty." The people eaſily flock to them; the ſkins of wine were opened, but there being a want of cups, rather than drink out of their hats, they left the wine, and with it the bread and cheeſe. The earl ſhowed his generoſity, ſaved his liquor, made the moſt of the day; there was a want of beds, and coach-houſes to ſpare. Thence we went to Linares, a journey towards heaven, and the way of ſalvation, narrow, and full of trouble and miſery.

Sir, You have cauſe enough to laugh at me; even take your full revenge, make out all your predictions. In the coach were Don Henry and myſelf, Matthew Montero, and Don Caſper de Tebes. Ten mules followed; at night we came to a hill, where the people of Linares hunt; there coaches and ſumpters were all ſtuck faſt. February played all his pranks among us, it was ever a mad month, but then raved downright. There was no getting out, and we reſolved to lie in the coach. The hill was all coach-houſes, for the coaches were lodged, and full of wreaths of ſtraw burning, which ſet fire to the olive gardens about the town. There were diſmal lamentations of mule drivers; the coachmen laſhed and ſwore, and the travellers curſed and banned. Thoſe who were on foot lugged out their legs from the mire, without ſhoes or *ſtockings, and ſome of them cried,* "Who is that ſtrips below there?" It looked like a ſhort purgatory. Thus we continued four hours, talking without book, till the admiral ſent people to deliver us out of thraldom. We got to Linares after the admiral was in bed, and ſupped with what we could ſave from Boniface. When I went to bed, I found Boniface had ſtole one of my blankets, but they ſoon brought me another. It is comical to ſee Boniface at night dancing about after meat and ſleep, with a candle in his hand, and aſking, "Have you ſupped? Have you got beds?" For he has a wandering ſupper, is ſtill in motion, and ſharps for a bed, pinching blankets every where, inſomuch, that in this country to huſh their children, they cry, Boniface is coming, as in other places they call the Bulbegger. Grimaldos bears him company, and moſt nights takes an ambling nap in a chair, and ſnores like an old judge upon the bench. He dines and ſups every where, and is half mad. Don Franciſco Marbelli comes in a hackney tumbrel, or hei-ge-ho-a, with John de Arana and Mendoza, the half black and whole Mulatto. For my part I am careleſs and bedleſs, for I have not heard of my trunk theſe ſix days. Don Henry and I lie coupled. There are beds that hold the ſeven ſleepers, and yet they not ſafe from Boniface. It is remarkable enough to ſee his majeſty with two Eſcuyes, the one a Pigmy, the other a Goliah; and to behold

Matthew Montero and me attending the funeral of our coach, and walking half a league on foot like pilgrims, he laughing to ſee me limp, and hear me call for oxen to draw out one of my legs that was ſtuck; and I bidding him, as he went down a little hill, carry his guts to his bears in his hands. We got to Andujar laſt night, being Friday, late in the dark, without any guide, where we continue to-day, becauſe the river Guadalquivir is ſo much ſwelled, and ſhall do the ſame to-morrow, becauſe we have no tidings of our ſumpters and carriages. The Duke del Infantado was left behind at Linares, becauſe his horſe litter fell, and he was hurt. The Patriarch is not to be found; and they are crying of him about the bogs. I am told my ſhirts are ſafe in a ſlough. His majeſty has put us all to it, without regarding the unſeaſonable weather; this is a good preſage of what we may expect, and other nations fear his ſtrong diſpoſition. Amidſt theſe difficulties he anſwers moſt affable to all men, gaining the affections of thoſe ſubjects he has inherited from his progenitors. He is a thorough paced king, and it is a comfort to have a king that can drag us after him, and not we drag the king, and to ſee him lead us where he pleaſes. The ſports of Carpio are put off, God grant they be not ſpoiled, for there is no doubt but they will be noble, Boniface has ſpoke to Mr. Aranel about your buſineſs, and both he and I are your humble ſervants and brother ſpungers. If you will do me a ſingular favour, ſend me an anſwer under cover to the admiral, and lay what commands you pleaſe on me, for I am an honeſt man, and will do all you require. Hortenſio has this day joined our company, and ſo we have a father confeſſor in caſe of danger, and more ſociety to divert us. Tell Don Andrew and Don Garcia I kiſs their hands. I make haſte to ſign, for the letter is long.

Don Franciſco de Quevedo.

A
LETTER
FROM
DON FRANCISCO de QUEVEDO, to the Son of the DUKE de OLIVARES, Prime Miniſter to King Philip IV. of Spain, in which he ſets down how he would have his Wife qualified.

ALL I can covet in a wife for my ſatisfaction and honour, and for the good of my ſoul, is that ſhe be educated in your excellency's family, and grown up in your ſervice; for if ſhe has known how to be obedient to your excellency, it is to me a ſufficient, both temporal and ſpiritual portion, that ſhe has been your ſervant. But in caſe your excellency's command ſhould be of a greater extent, in obedience to it, I will ſet down how I could wiſh that wife qualified, which God ſhall be pleaſed to beſtow upon me, by means of your excellency and my lord duke. This I do rather to divert, than to inform your excellency.

As for myſelf, my lord, I am nothing but what my lord duke has made me; becauſe what I was has ruined me, and deſtroyed my reputation; and if at preſent I am any thing, it is becauſe I have ceaſed to be what I was, thanks be to God and to his excellency. I have been variouſly wicked, and having ceaſed to be ſo, am not yet good; for I left wickedneſs, becauſe I was tired with it, not becauſe I was truly penitent. All the advantage of ſuch reformation is, that it ſecures me from being deluded into any manner of wantonneſs, becauſe I am ſufficiently warned and armed againſt it.

I am a man of good birth in my country, as your excellency may underſtand; I have a houſe of my own in the Mountains, and am the ſon of parents whoſe memory is honourable to me, though mine be a grievance to them.

I will ever give ſuch an account of my fortune and age, that my fortune may afterwards be found greater than repreſented, and my age leſs.

My enemies ſay I am lame, whereas in truth, through a negligent mien, I appear ſo; and it being dubious whether I limp or coupee, wagers may be laid whether I am lame or not lame.

As to my perſon, it is neither hateful nor offenſive; and as it claims no commendation, ſo neither does it move ſuch as ſee me to curſing or laughter.

Now I have declared who, and what manner of man I am; I will ſet down what ſort of woman I would have her be whom God ſhall beſtow on me. I confeſs, unleſs your excellency had commanded, it were impudence for ſuch a fellow to preſcribe what ſort of a wife he would have, when no woman would be troubled with ſuch a huſband as I am.

I deſire poſitively ſhe ſhould be well born, virtuous and diſcreet; for if a fool, ſhe will not know how to preſerve or make uſe of the other two qualifications, becauſe, though a gentlewoman, I expect ſhe will be affable, and that her virtue be ſuch as becomes a married woman, not an anchorite, a nun, or a friar. Her huſband, and the care of her family, muſt be to her inſtead of the choir and the oratory. Yet if ſhe muſt be diſcreet with any touches of learning, I had rather ſhe were a fool, for it is eaſier to bear with a woman's ignorance, than with her conceitedneſs.

I would neither have her deformed nor beautiful. Theſe extremes are reconciled by an agreeable countenance; which is a medium that renders what is handſome lovely, and ſecures what in her appears airy. A deformed woman is rather a ſcarecrow than a companion, and a beautiful one rather perplexes than delights; but if ſhe muſt be either the one or the other, I had rather have her beautiful than deformed, for it is better to be in care than to be afraid, and to have a wife to guard than one to fly from.

I neither would have her rich, nor poor, but with ſome fortune; for neither is ſhe to buy me, nor I her. There can be no miſs of riches where there is virtue and gentility; for the man is vilely rich, who, having an eſtate, refuſes a woman becauſe ſhe is poor; and he is baſely poor, who, having no fortune, covets a woman becauſe ſhe is rich.

I had rather ſhe was diſpoſed to mirth than melancholy; for being tied to one another, and living always together, will breed us both trouble enough; and this grievance is in ſome meaſure eaſed by a ſweet and cheerful nature; for to have a hypochondriac wife, always grunting in a corner like a mouſe in a cheeſe, is to be tied to continual ſorrow.

She muſt be well dreſſed to pleaſe me, not to gain the applauſe of others; and ſhe muſt wear what is decent, not whatſoever the folly of other women ſhall invent. She muſt not do as ſome do, but that which all ought to do. I had rather ſhe were covetous than prodigal, for this vice is to be dreaded, the other may prove profitable. It were a great happineſs to find one that were liberal.

I do not concern myſelf whether ſhe be clear or brown of complexion, or whether her hair be black or fair; only this I require, that if ſhe be brown, ſhe do not make herſelf white, for of neceſſity a man muſt rather be jealous of that cheat than in love with it.

Whether ſhe be tall or ſhort, it is indifferent to me, for the heels of the ſhoes ſupply the defects of ſtature, and, like death, make all people alike.

As to her being fat or lean, it is to be obſerved, that if I cannot have her interlaid, I am altogether for a lean, not a fat one; I had rather ſhe were a ſkeleton, or ſhotten herring, than a greaſy hoſteſs, or the picture of Bacchus. I will neither have a child, nor an old woman, which is like the cradle or the coffin; for I have long ſince forgot to ſing lillaby, and have not yet learned to ſing dirges. It is enough for me that ſhe is a woman grown, and I ſhall be well pleaſed if ſhe is young.

I could wiſh with all my heart ſhe might have no fine hands, eyes, or mouth; for if ſhe have theſe three things in perfection, it is impoſſible any body ſhould endure her, becauſe ſhe will tire all the world with playing with her hands that they may be ſeen, and rolling her eyes that they may be obſerved; and it is intolerable to ſee a woman always gaping and laughing to ſhow her white teeth. Anxiety deſtroys beauty, and negligence hides faults.

I will not have one that has neither father nor mother, that I may ſave commemorating the dead, nor am I willing ſhe ſhould have all her kindred living. A father and mother I would have, becauſe I am not ſuperſtitiouſly afraid of a father-in-law. As for her aunts, I ſhall be glad if they are in purgatory, and will allow maſſes to be ſaid for them over and above. I ſhould bleſs God if ſhe were deaf and tongue-tied, which are parts that tire company and cut off viſits; and above all, ſhould be proud ſhe were ill-natured, for a fair conditioned woman is always harping upon the ſame ſtring, and ſaying, that if ſhe were like other women, and that her fooliſh good nature is to blame.

But the beſt of all were, if ſhe would conſent we might live without an old governante, or at leaſt, if ſhe would be ſatisfied we ſhould keep half a one between us, that is, a little old woman with little headclothes and leſs petticoats, that the eyes might be delivered from the nauſeouſneſs of the governante, before they are quite off the ſpectre. Beſides, it were moſt reaſonable, ſince the governantes are the ſcare-crows of the antichambers, placed there to ſecure the forbidden fruit of the young damſels, that they ſhould be clothed like peaſants with a cap, a ſtaff, buſkins, and inſtead of a mourning veil, a mumping long cloak, becauſe they are ſkilled in the art of begging, and that they be called by an additional name of Mumpers, as the emperors are ſtyled Cæſars. That I may end ſeriouſly and with truth, as I began, I muſt tell your excellency, I ſhall highly prize a wife, if ſhe be ſuch as I wiſh her; and do know how to bear with her, if ſhe be ſuch as I deſerve; for I may be unhappily married, but I cannot be an ill huſband. God grant your excellency a long and happy life, and prolong the days of my lord duke, giving you that iſſue that is requiſite to your family and grandeur.

THE END.

DIRECTIONS TO THE BINDER.

The Sheets of Vols. II. and III. of the Works have been by miſtake marked Vol. I. and II. The Binder is, however, deſired to follow the arrangement pointed out by the *General Titles*.

00044792

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 15 June, 2016